ADJOINT L-VALUE AS A PERIOD INTEGRAL
AND THE MASS FORMULA OF SIEGEL–SHIMURA

HARUZO HIDA

ABSTRACT. Let $F$ be an elliptic Hecke eigen cusp form. For a quaternion algebra $D/Q$ and a semi-simple quadratic extension $E = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{\Delta})/\mathbb{Q}$ (including $E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}$), we determine the period of the Doi-Naganuma theta lift $\theta^*(F)$ of $F$ to the algebraic group $(D \otimes \mathbb{Q} E)^\times$ over Shimura subvarieties associated to $D$, as the product of $L(1, \text{Ad}(\rho_F) \otimes (\hat{\Delta}))$ and the mass $m_1$ of Siegel–Shimura for a ternary quadratic form. Here $\rho_F$ is the compatible system of Galois representations associated to $F$, and $\text{Ad}(\rho_F)$ acts on the Lie algebra $sl(2)$ via conjugation by $\rho_F$.

To state a simplest example for the adjoint L-value formula for a definite quaternion algebra $D/Q$ ramified at one prime $p$, set $E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}$ and let $F \in S_2(\Gamma_0(p))$ be a Hecke eigenform normalized so that its Fourier coefficients in $\exp(2\pi i \tau)$ ($\tau \in \mathbb{H} := \{z \in \mathbb{C} | \text{Im}(z) > 0\}$) is equal to 1. Defining $\lambda$ by $f(T(n)) = \lambda(T(n))F$ for Hecke operators $T(n)$, $\lambda$ gives rise to an algebra homomorphism of the Hecke algebra for $S_2(\Gamma_0(p))$ to the integer ring $A$ (with a few primes inverted) of the Hecke field of $F$. Inverting finite number of primes, we may assume that $A$ is a principal ideal domain; so, we have the canonical period $\Omega_\pm = \Omega_\pm(F, \lambda; A) \in \mathbb{C}^\times$ (up to units in $A$) as in [EMI, §9.2.4]. Of course, if $F$ is associated with a rational elliptic curve, we take $A := \mathbb{Z}$ and $\Omega_\pm$ is determined up to a sign. Take a definite quaternion algebra $D$ unramified only at a prime $p$ with a maximal order $R \subset D$. Take a finite subset $Sh = Sh_1 \subset D^\times$ such that $Sh \cong D^\times/D^\times_h \cap D^\times$ for $h \in Sh$. The following formula is a special case of Corollary 5.3 (with an explicit value of $m_1$ given in Remark 4.3):

**Theorem 0.1.** For the canonical period $\Omega_\pm$ of $F$ and the mass factor $m_1 = \frac{p-1}{2}$ of Siegel,

$$(1 - p^{-2})^{-1}m_1L(1, \text{Ad}(\rho_F)) = \sum_{h \in Sh} \frac{\zeta_2(h, h) H(h)}{\Omega_+ \Omega_-}.$$

Writing $D_0$ for the quadratic space $\{v \in D | \text{Tr}(v) = 0\}$, the mass $m_1$ above for the lattice $R \cap D_0$ is computed by Siegel. The automorphic form $\theta^*(F)$ on $D^\times \cap D^\times_h \cap D^\times_h$ is the base change theta lift of $F$ to $D^\times \cap D^\times$ which is a function of $(h, g) \in D^\times_h \cap D^\times_h$. The above formula is an adjoint generalization of the mass formula of Siegel:

$$m_1 \frac{\zeta(2)}{2} = \sum_{h \in Sh} e_h^{-1},$$

and also an obvious generalization of the Dirichlet class number formula. We will prove this type of an explicit formula of $L(1, \text{Ad}(\rho_F) \otimes \chi_E)$ for any Hecke eigen new form $F$ of appropriate level with quadratic twist by the character $\chi_E$ of an arbitrary semi-simple quadratic extension $E/Q$ and an arbitrary quaternion algebra $D/Q$. The exact formulas are in Theorem 4.7 when $D$ is indefinite and $E$ is real, Theorem 5.2 when $D$ is definite and $E$ is real, and Theorem 7.1 when $D$ is definite and $E$ is imaginary and in Theorem 8.3 when $D$ is indefinite and $E$ is imaginary.

We apply the seesaw identity [K84, (1.9)] to the pairs $(SO_V, SL(2))$ and $(SO_{W_0} \times SO_Z, Mp(2) \times Mp(2))$ for an orthogonal decomposition $V = Z \oplus W_0$ of a quadratic space $V$. The seesaw identity (R) below itself is tautological, but an important point is an idea of Waldspurger to convert it into a Rankin–Selberg convolution via the Siegel–Weil formula taking a constant as an automorphic form.

---

*Date:* September 12, 2022.

*2020 Mathematics Subject Classification.* primary 11F67, 11G18, 11F27; secondary 11F75, 11E20.

*Key words and phrases.* Adjoint L-value, mass formula, congruence number.

The author is partially supported by the NSF grant: DMS 1464106.
on SO_{W_0} and a locally constant character on SO_Z. If \( \dim Z = 1 \), the Siegel-Weil formula does not have much effect and produces the half-integral theta series of the character for \( Z \), and thus the \( L \)-values appear as a period integral by Shimura's calculation of the Rankin product.

More precisely, for an elliptic cusp form \( F \), an idea of Waldspurger [W85] of computing the period of a theta lift of \( F \) to \( SO_V \) over an orthogonal Shimura subvariety \( S_Z \times S_{W_0} \subset S_V \) is two-folds:

(S) Split \( \theta(\phi)(\tau; z, h_0) = \theta(\psi)(h_Z) \cdot \theta(\phi_0)(h_0) \) (the variable \( \tau \) in the Poincaré half plane \( \mathcal{S} \), \( h = (h_Z, h_0) \in O_{W_0}(\mathbb{A}) \times O_Z(\mathbb{A}) \)) for a decomposition \( \phi = \psi \otimes \phi_0 \) (here \( \psi \) and \( \phi_0 \) are Schwartz–Bruhat functions on \( Z_\mathbf{A} \) and \( W_{0, \mathbf{A}} \));

(R) For the theta lift \( \Theta(F)(h) = \int_X F(\tau(\phi)(\tau; h))d\mu_h \) with a modular curve \( X \), the period \( \mathcal{P} \) over the Shimura subvariety \( S_Z \times S_0 \) \((S_Z \text{ for } O_Z \text{ and } S_0 = S_{W_0} \text{ for } O_{W_0})\) is given by a rather trivial seesaw identity:

\[
\int_{S_Z \times S_0} \int_X F(\tau) \theta(\phi)(\tau; h) d\mu_x d\mu_h = \int_X F(\tau) \left( \int_{S_Z} \theta(\psi)(\tau; h_Z) d\mu_h \right) \cdot \left( \int_{S_0} \theta(\phi_0)(\tau; h_0) d\mu_{h_0} \right) d\mu_x,
\]

where \( \tau = \xi + \eta \sqrt{-1} \) is the variable of the metaplectic side and \( d\mu_x = \eta^{-2} d\xi d\eta \). Then invoke the Siegel–Weil formula to convert inner integrals into the Siegel-Weil Eisenstein series \( E(\psi) \) and \( E(\phi_0) \), reaching Rankin-Selberg integral

\[
P = \int_X F(\tau) E(\psi) E(\phi_0) d\mu_x = L\text{-value}.
\]

If \( \dim Z = 1 \), \( E(\psi) \) is a half integral theta series as we already remarked, and by Shimura’s calculation of the Rankin product, adjoint \( L \)-values (twisted by a character) shows up independently of (the size of) \( V \) as long as \( V \) has even dimension \( \geq 4 \). We hope to deal with the general \( V \) in future.

Waldspurger [W85] applied in the early 1980s this scheme to \( V = D \) for a quaternion algebra \( D/\mathbb{Q} \) with a splitting \( V := D \cong E \otimes E \) for a quadratic field \( E = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{\Delta}] \) over \( \mathbb{Q} \) and expressed the period by the central critical value of the Hecke \( L \)-function \( L(s, F \otimes \chi_E) \) for \( \chi_E := (\Delta) \).

In this paper, we apply the principles (S) and (R) to the simplest case of an arbitrary 4-dimensional quadratic space over \( \mathbb{Q} \) which produces the quaternionic Doi–Naganuma lift to the quadratic extension \( E = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{\Delta}] \) of \( \mathbb{Q} \) (including \( \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q} \)) as a theta left, and we compute the period in terms of the adjoint \( L \)-value \( L(s, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E) = L(s, Ad(\rho_F) \otimes \chi_E) \) at \( s = 1 \). We compute fully the period integral without any ambiguous factors. To prove the integral period factorization predicted in [DHI, Conjectures 1.3 and 1.5] \( \text{(not just rational one as conjectured, for example, in [Y95]) of the canonical period of the Doi-Naganuma lift into canonical elliptic period factors, an absolutely precise computation (as in Theorem 0.1) involving the size of the congruence module of } E \text{ as the error factor of the period and the Petersson inner product. This point will be discussed in our subsequent papers once the results in this paper are generalized to Hilbert modular forms. Note that the Galois side of [DHI, Conjecture 1.5] is proven in [EMI, Theorem 8.3.7] and [H22, Theorems A and C] and that the exact computation of the mass by Shimura in [Sh99] for an arbitrary lattice in \( W_0 \) is very useful in this integral point of view (though some mathematicians living purely in an abstract world may not like such a tedious computation).}

Let \( D \) be a quaternion algebra over \( \mathbb{Q} \), and we put \( D_E = D \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} E \) on which \( 1 \neq \sigma \in \text{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q}) \) acts through the factor \( E \). Then the Doi–Naganuma lift of elliptic cusp forms to \( D_E^\pm \) is realized as a theta lift with respect to the quadratic space over \( \mathbb{Q} \):

\[
D_\sigma = D_E^\pm := \{ v \in D_E \mid v^\sigma = \pm v \}
\]

for the involution \( \iota \) given by \( v + v^\iota = \text{Tr} D_E/E(v) \). The quadratic form on \( D_E^\pm \) is induced by \( v \mapsto vv^\sigma = \pm N(v) \) for the reduced norm \( N : D_E \to E \) which has values in \( \mathbb{Q} \) over \( D_E^\pm \). In the late 1970s to the early 1980s, the quadratic \( \mathbb{Q} \)-space \( D_\sigma \) for \( D = M_2(\mathbb{Q}) \) is studied to establish Doi-Naganuma lift for \( E \) real in [K78] and for \( E \) imaginary in [A78] and [F83], though the investigation of base-change via theta lift has been somehow forgotten after the general theory of base-change lift by Langlands via trace formula. Doi-Naganuma lift via theta correspondence is not just a trace (or representation) identity but contains more arithmetic information as it computes the lift (ascent) and descent explicitly. This paper is perhaps the first attempt of computing fully explicitly the period integral of the base-change over Shimura subvariety \( D^{\times} \setminus D_A^{\times} \) inside the ambient quaternionic automorphic variety \( D_E^\times \setminus D_A^\times \).
Let $D_0 = D_0^\perp := \{ v \in D_0^2 \mid |v| = -v \}$ and $Z = Z^\perp := D_0^\perp \cap E$ inside $D_E$. Then $\dim_\Q Z^\perp = 1$ and $\dim_{\Q} D_0^\perp = 3$, and we have a splitting $D_0^2 = Z^\perp \oplus D_0^\perp$ of quadratic spaces. Write $w = w_\V$ for the Weil representation of the metaplectic cover $\Mp(\A) \to \SL_2(\A)$ realized on Schwartz-Bruhat functions $\phi$ on $V_\A$ for $V = Z, D_0, D_\sigma$, and $OV(\A)$ for the orthogonal group of $V$ acting from the right on $V_\A$. Note that $O_{D_\sigma}$ (resp. $O_{D_0}$) is close to $D_0^\perp$ (resp. $D^\perp$). We have the theta kernel $\theta_\V(\phi)(g, h) = \sum_{\alpha \in \Sigma_\V} (w_{\V}(\phi)(ah))$ with $g \in \Mp(\A)$ and $h \in O_V$. Since $Z^\perp$ is definite, we have theta series $\theta_\V(\psi) = \sum_{n \in \Z} \psi(n)^i \eta(n^2 \tau)$ of $Z$ with $\eta(\tau) := \exp(2\pi i \tau - 1\tau)$ for the variable $\tau$ in the Poincaré half plane $\H$ (on the metaplectic side) and a Dirichlet character $\psi$ regarded as a Schwartz–Bruhat function on $Z_\A$. The Eichler order $O(N)$ (of level $N$) in $D$ gives rise to a lattice $L \subset D_0^\perp$, and we consider a Schwartz–Bruhat function $\phi_0$ on $D_0, A$ whose finite part is the characteristic function of $\L = L \otimes_\Z \Z (\Z = \prod_p \Z_p)$ with a suitable choice of infinity part. Then we apply Waldspurger’s technique to $\theta_{D_0}(\psi \otimes \phi_0) = \theta_\V(\psi)\theta_{D_0}(\phi_0)$. Since $Z^\perp$ is definite with negligible orthogonal group, we apply Siegel–Weil formula to $\theta_{D_0}(\phi_0)$ which produces an Eisenstein series of half integral weight $E(\phi_0)$. The formula for our use is not in the convergent range Weil studied, and we need the formula in Sweet’s thesis [Sw90, §3.3] computed by the method of Kudla and Rallis [MSS, §5.3].

The even Clifford group of $D_\sigma$ (resp. $D_0$) is almost $D_0^\perp$ (resp. $D^\perp$); so, the period integral is over a Shimura subvariety associated to $D^\perp$ inside the Shimura variety of $D_0^\perp$. Assume that $F$ is a Hecke eigenform with an appropriate level determined by $\phi_0$ and $\psi$ with Neben character $\psi^{-1} \chi_E$, and write $\rho_F$ for the compatible system of Galois representations of $F$. Define $L(s, Ad(F)) = L(s, Ad(\rho_F))$ for the adjoint representation $Ad(\rho_F)$ of $\rho_F$ on $\mathbf{sl}(2)$ on which the Galois group acts via conjugation by $\rho_F$. The final formula has the following form:

\[ P = c \cdot m_1 \cdot L(1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E) \]

for an explicit (rather trivial) constant $c$ involving some Euler factors and the mass $m_1$ described below. As is well known, the analytic continuation of $L(s, Ad(F))$ was first given by Shimura in [Sh75] as a Rankin product of $\theta_\V(\psi)$ and $F$ over a modular curve, and therefore it is natural to have the adjoint $L$-value as the period over the Shimura subvariety associated to $D^\perp$.

Here is a description of why we get the mass factor $0 < m_1 \in \Q$ in our formula. For the Riemann zeta function $\zeta(s)$, it is the ratio $m_1 := \pi^{s/2}m/\zeta(2)$ for the mass $m$ of Siegel–Shimura [AQF, §37.1] for the quadratic space $D_0$ with respect to the lattice $L$ for the level $N$ of $\theta(\phi)$ (and $F$). Here $c_D = 1, 2$ accordingly to $D \otimes_\Q \R \cong \M_2(\R), \H$. The Siegel–Weil formula by Weil [W65, no.52] is formulated with respect to the Tamagawa measure $d\omega$ for the orthogonal group $O_{D_0}$ while the period is computed with respect to another canonical measure $d\mu_\omega$ with volume $1$ over the image of $\tilde{R}(N)^\perp$ in $O_{D_0}(A(\infty))$. One can define the mass $m$ to be the ratio $d\mu_\omega/2d\omega$ (we need to have $\frac{1}{2}d\omega$ as the Tamagawa number of $O_{D_0}$ is equal to $2$; see [MSS, (5.3.3)]). In the three dimensional case, apart from some initial (partial) results by Siegel, the exact form of the mass $m$ was not known until Shimura’s determination for all quadratic spaces over a totally real field in [Sh99], and by his formula, $m$ in our case is a multiple of $\zeta(2)$ by a simple (but hard to determine) constant $m_1$, though, as Siegel discovered, $m_1$ is a product of local factors. Our formula resembles the Siegel–Shimura mass formula (with $L(1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E)$ in place of $\zeta(2)$), particularly when $D$ is definite (see §5.4).

Shintani [S75] and Waldspurger [W81] had another idea of computing the Fourier expansion on the metaplectic side of the theta descent (the adjoint map of the theta left) from $O_{D_0}$, and the period of the form $P$ is expected to show up as a Fourier coefficient of the Doi-Naganuma descent from $O_{D_\sigma}$. More precisely the coefficient in $e(\pm N(\alpha)\tau)$ (or $e(\pm N(\alpha)\eta)$) for $\alpha \in D_\sigma^\perp \cap D_E^\perp$ with the variable $\tau \in \H$ on the metaplectic side is the period with respect to an orthogonal group $O_\alpha$ depending on $\alpha$ times the adjoint mass $m_\alpha$ dependent on $\alpha$ (see Theorems 4.10, 5.8, 7.3 and 8.4), where $m_\alpha = m_1$ if $\alpha$ is a scalar in $Z$. The even Clifford group of $O_\alpha$ is the multiplicative group of a quaternion subalgebra $D_\alpha \subset D_E$ over $\Q$ dependent on $\alpha$ and $D_\alpha = D$ if $0 \neq \alpha \in \Z$. When $E$ is imaginary, those $\alpha$ appearing in the $q$-expansion must satisfy $D_\alpha \otimes \R \cong \M_2(\R)$, while if $E$ is real, all quaternion subalgebras over $\Q$ of $D_E$ appear.

The result in this paper should be generalized to a general base field and low dimensional quadratic spaces $V$. The author plans to do all computations in near future, as he hopes to make progress in the integral period relations predicted in [DHI] and [H99] of the above type of periods, where in the latter paper, the computation of $P$ was done for $D$ given by the $2 \times 2$ matrix algebra over the base
field $E_+$ with $E = E_+ \times E_+$ without recourse to the theta correspondence, and the result in [H99] has been used in the study of period relations in [TU22].

Contents

1. Theta correspondence 5
   1.1. Weil representation 5
   1.2. Siegel–Weil theta series 6
   1.3. Explicit form of metaplectic groups 6
2. Rankin convolution 8
   2.1. Adelic Fourier expansion cusp forms of integral weight 8
   2.2. Adelic Fourier expansion, cusp forms of half integral weight 10
   2.3. Eisenstein series 11
   2.4. Adelic Rankin product, integral weight versus half integral weight 12
   2.5. Adelic Rankin product of mixed weight 14
3. Quadratic space over $\mathbb{Q}$ 16
   3.1. List of quadratic spaces we study 16
   3.2. Choices of $D$ for a fixed $D_E$ 18
4. Period for indefinite $D_\sigma$ with $E$ real. 20
   4.1. Explicit form of Siegel–Weil theta series 20
   4.2. Differential form coming from theta series 21
   4.3. Factoring the theta series 22
   4.4. Siegel–Weil formula and period integrals 24
   4.5. Mass factor $m$ 25
   4.6. Choice of $\phi_Z$ 27
   4.7. Verification of the assumption (V) 28
   4.8. Verification of the assumption (Key) 29
   4.9. Convolution 29
   4.10. The period is an L-value 30
   4.11. Fourier expansion of theta descent 31
5. Definite $D$ with $E$ real 37
   5.1. Definite theta series 37
   5.2. Factoring theta series in the definite case with $E$ real 38
   5.3. Siegel–Weil formula in the real definite case 39
   5.4. Mass formula and the adjoint L-value formula 40
   5.5. Fourier expansion of theta descent for $E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}$ and definite $D$. 40
   5.6. Hecke equivariance of the theta descent 42
   5.7. Congruence number formula 42
   5.8. Fourier expansion of theta descent for definite $D$ and real $E$ 43
6. General theory for imaginary $E$ 46
   6.1. Cohomological modular forms on $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ 46
   6.2. Realization of $D_{\sigma,\mathbb{C}}^\pm$ 46
   6.3. Locally constant sheaves on $\Gamma_{\phi}\backslash \mathcal{H}$ 48
   6.4. Vector valued theta series for imaginary $E$ 49
   6.5. Explicit form down to earth of Schwartz functions 50
   6.6. Invariant pairings and differential operators 51
   6.7. Invariance of $[\alpha; \mathbf{x}]$ 52
   6.8. Relation between $\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$-polynomial representations 53
   6.9. Vanishing of $([\alpha; \mathbf{x}]^n, f)$ if $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H}$ 55
   6.10. Theta differential form 55
   6.11. Compatibility of invariant paring and wedge product 57
7. Definite $D$ with imaginary $E$ 58
   7.1. Siegel–Weil formula for definite $D$ and imaginary $E$ 58
   7.2. Theta descent 60
   7.3. Vanishing of Fourier coefficients of $e(N(\alpha)\tau)$ when $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H}$ 61
7.4. Computation of Fourier coefficients of \( e(\pm N(\alpha)\tau) \) when \( D_{\alpha,\mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R}) \) 62
8. Indefinite \( D \) with \( E \) imaginary 64
8.1. Analytic theta differential form 64
8.2. Siegel–Weil formula in the indefinite imaginary case 66
8.3. Computation of Fourier coefficients of theta descent 68
References 69

1. Theta correspondence

We describe theta correspondences between the metaplectic cover \( \text{Mp} \) of \( \text{SL}(2) \) and orthogonal groups \( O_V \) for quadratic spaces \( V \) over \( \mathbb{Q} \). Write \( U \) for the upper unipotent subgroup of \( \text{SL}(2) \) and \( T \) for the diagonal torus of \( \text{SL}(2) \) with \( B = TU \subset \text{SL}(2) \) (the upper triangular Borel subgroup).

1.1. Weil representation. Let \((V, Q)\) be a quadratic space over \( \mathbb{Q} \) with \( \dim V = m \). The quadratic form \( V \ni x \mapsto Q(x) \in \mathbb{Q} \) produces a \( \mathbb{Q} \)-bilinear symmetric pairing \( s(x, y) = Q(x + y) - Q(x) - Q(y) \). We choose a basis \( v_1, \ldots, v_m \) of \( V \) over \( \mathbb{Q} \) and define \( S = (s(v_i, v_j))_{i,j} \in M_m(\mathbb{Q}) \). The discriminant \( d(V) := \det(S) \bmod (Q^*)^2 \) is well defined independent of the choice of the basis. We also denote this class modulo square as \( d(V) \). In particular, \( k_V := Q[\sqrt{-1}]^{m(m-1)/2} \det(Q) \) is \( Q \) or a quadratic extension of \( \mathbb{Q} \) independent of the choice of the basis. If \( m = \dim V \) is even, we put \( \chi_V \) for the character \( k_V/Q \). If \( m \) is odd, \( \chi_V \) is the “Neben” character of the standard theta series weight \( 2 \times \sqrt{-1} \).

Write \( A \) for the adele ring of \( \mathbb{Q} \) and \( A^{(v)} = A \cap \prod_{v \neq v} \mathbb{Q}_v \) for a place \( v \) of \( \mathbb{Q} \). The group \( \text{SL}_2(k) \) for a field \( k \) is generated by \( J := \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix} \right) \), diagonal matrices and upper unipotent matrices [PAF, Lemma 4.46]; so, the density of \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \subset \text{SL}_2(A^{(v)}) \) (removing one place \( v \)) by strong approximation tells us that \( \text{SL}_2(A^{(v)}) \) is topologically generated by these elements. By Iwasawa decomposition, \( \text{SL}_2(A) = \text{SL}_2(A^{(\infty)}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) is generated by \( B(\mathbb{A})\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( J \). Write \( S(V_X) \) for the space of Schwartz-Bruhat functions on \( V_X = V \otimes Q X \) for \( X = \mathbb{Q}_p, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{A}, (\mathbb{A})^{(\infty)} \).

Let \( B \subset \text{SL}(2) \) be the upper triangular Borel subgroup with its unipotent radical \( U \) and the diagonal torus \( T \) so that \( B = T \times U \). Weil defined in [W64, no.13] an action of \( U(X), T(X) \) and \( J = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix} \right) \) on \( S(V_X) \) as follows:

\[
(1.1) \quad r \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 1 & a \\ 0 & 1 \end{smallmatrix} \right) \phi(v) = e_A(Q(v)u)\phi(v), \quad r \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \phi(v) = |a|^{m/2} \phi(\alpha v) \quad \text{and} \quad r(J)\phi(v) = \tilde{\phi}(v),
\]

where \( \phi \mapsto \tilde{\phi} \) is the Fourier transform with respect to \( e_A(s(x, y)) \) normalized so that \( \tilde{\phi}(x) = \phi(-x) \). By computation, \( r(-1) \) commutes with \( r(g) \) for all \( g \) as above, and \( r(-1)\phi(v) = \phi(-v) \).

The metaplectic group \( \text{Mp}(X) \) is defined to be the subgroup of the continuous \( \mathbb{C} \)-linear automorphism group \( \text{Aut}(S(V_X)) \) generated by \( r(g) \) for \( g \) as in (1.1). It appears that \( \text{Mp}(X) \) depends on the quadratic space \( V \). As we will see later, there is a construction of \( \text{Mp}(X) \) independent of \( V \); so, there exists a unique group \( \text{Mp}(X) \) acting on \( S(V_X) \) for all \( V \). However the action \( r \) depends on \( V \); so, if necessary, we write \( r_V \) to indicate dependence. For example, \( r_V \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \) for the quadratic character \( \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 1 \end{smallmatrix} \right) : \mathbb{A}^{\times}/\mathbb{Q}^{\times} \to \mathbb{C}^{\times} \) if \( X = \mathbb{A}, V = (\mathbb{Q}, \mathbb{A}^{\times}) \) and \( V' = (\mathbb{Q}, \Delta x^{\times}) \) with \( \Delta \in \mathbb{Q}^{\times} \) (Neben type change as in [Sh73, Proposition 1.3]). Since it is known that \( r(gg') = r(g)r(g') \) up to scalars \( z \in \mathbb{C} \) with \( |z| = 1 \), we have a canonical exact sequence of locally compact groups:

\[
1 \to S^1 \to \text{Mp}(X) \xrightarrow{\pi_X} \text{SL}_2(X) \to 1,
\]

where \( S^1 = \{ z \in \mathbb{C} : |z| = 1 \} \) acts on \( \phi \) by scalar multiplication \( \phi \mapsto z\phi \). The center of \( \text{Mp}(X) \) is isomorphic to \( S^1 \times \{ \pm 1 \} \) generated by \( S^1 \) and \( r(-1) ((z, -1) \in S^1 \times \{ \pm 1 \} \text{ acts as} \phi(v) \mapsto z\phi(-v)) \).

Let \( \Omega = \{ \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) : c \in \mathbb{A}^{\times} \} \). Then, we have \( r(b)r(\sigma)r(b') = r(xb'b') \) for \( b, b' \in B(X) \) and \( \sigma \in \Omega \) [W64, no.32]. Weil made a canonical section \( r_{\mathbb{Q}} : \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \to \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \) which coincides with \( r \) on \( \Omega \) [W64, no.40]. We identify \( \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \) with the image of \( r_{\mathbb{Q}} \) in \( \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \). The action of \( \text{Mp}(X) \) on \( S(V_X) \) gives rise to the Weil representation \( w = w_V \) of the metaplectic group \( \text{Mp}(X) \) into \( \text{Aut}(S(V_X)) \).
Let $O_V$ be the orthogonal group for $V$ over $\mathbb{Q}$ and $GO_V$ be its similitude group (acting from the right on $V$); so,

$$GO_V(A) = \{ \alpha \in GL(V \otimes \mathbb{Q}) | Q(\alpha) = \nu_V(\alpha)Q(x) \text{ with } \nu_V(\alpha) \in \mathbb{A}^x \}$$

and $SO_V = SL(V) \cap O_V$. We let $g \in GO_V(A)$ acts on $S(V_\lambda)$ by

$$L(g)\phi(v) = |\nu_V(g)|_\lambda^{m/2} \phi(vg).$$

1.2. Siegel–Weil theta series. The action $w$ and $L$ commutes on $Mp(A) \times O_V(A)$; so, we may regard $w \otimes L$ as a representation of $Mp(A) \times O_V(A)$. The following result is [W64, Théorème 6].

**Theorem 1.1.** The generalized theta series of Siegel–Weil

$$\theta(\phi)(x; g) = \sum_{v \in V} (w(x)L(g)\phi)(v) \quad \text{(for each } \phi \in S(V_\lambda))$$

gives an automorphic form defined as a function on $(SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(A)) \times (O_V(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash O_V(A))$.

1.3. Explicit form of metaplectic groups. The extension $S^1 \hookrightarrow Mp(A) \twoheadrightarrow SL_2(A)$ actually descends down to $\mu_2 \hookrightarrow \overline{SL}_2(A) \twoheadrightarrow SL_2(A)$. In other words, the 2-cocycle: $SL_2(A)$ giving rise to the extension $Mp(A)$ is cohomologous to another one $\kappa : SL_2(A) \twoheadrightarrow \mu_2$ with values in $\mu_2$ (as we will describe it later in this subsection), and we have the following commutative diagram:

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
\mu_2 & \twoheadrightarrow & \overline{SL}_2(A) \\
\cap & & \cap \\
S^1 & \twoheadrightarrow & Mp(A) \twoheadrightarrow SL_2(A).
\end{array}$$

The representation $w$ descends (non-canonically) to $SL_2(A)$ if $m = \dim V$ is even, and in this case, we can replace $\overline{SL}_2$ by $SL_2$ choosing a descent.

For integers $a, b \neq 0$, we define Shimura’s symbol $(\frac{a}{b})$ in [Sh73, page 442] by

(1) $(\frac{a}{b}) = 0$ if $(a, b) \neq 1$ (where $(a, b)$ is the GCD of $a$ and $b$),

(2) If $b$ is an odd prime, $(\frac{a}{b})$ is the Legendre symbol (i.e., it is less one than the number of solutions of $x^2 \equiv a \pmod{b}$),

(3) If $b > 0$, $a \rightarrow (\frac{a}{b})$ is a character modulo $b$,

(4) If $a \neq 0$, $b \rightarrow (\frac{a}{b})$ is a character modulo $4a$ whose conductor is the conductor of $\mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{a}]$.

(5) $(\frac{a}{-1}) = 1$ or $-1$ according as $a > 0$ or $a < 0$,

(6) $(\frac{0}{-1}) = 1$.

Consider $\theta : \mathcal{H} \twoheadrightarrow \mathbb{C}$ given by $\theta(\tau) = \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} e(n^2\tau)$, where $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{H}^+$ and

$$\mathcal{H}^\pm := \{ z \in \mathbb{C} | \pm \text{Im}(z) > 0 \},$$

which are isomorphic to $SL_2(\mathbb{R})/SO_2(\mathbb{R})$ by $g \rightarrow g(\pm \sqrt{-1})$ respectively.

Define for $\gamma \in \Gamma_0(4)$, $h(\gamma, \tau) := \theta(\gamma(\tau))/\theta(\tau)$. Then by [Sh73, (1.10)]

$$h((\begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{smallmatrix}), \tau) = \varepsilon_d^{-1} \left( \frac{\tau}{d} \right) j((\begin{smallmatrix} a \\ c \\ d \end{smallmatrix}) \tau)^{1/2} \text{ with } j((\begin{smallmatrix} a \\ c \\ d \end{smallmatrix}) \tau) = cr + d,$$

where $\sqrt{|z|} \exp(\pi i \theta)$ if $z = |z|e(\theta)$ with $-\pi < \theta \leq \pi$, and $\varepsilon_d = \sqrt{-1}$ or 1 according as $d \equiv 3 \pmod{4}$ or $\pm 1 \pmod{4}$.

We can realize $SL_2(\mathbb{R}) = \{ (g, J(g, \tau)) | g \in SL_2(\mathbb{R}), J(g, \tau)^2 = j(g, \tau) \}$ with multiplication given by $(g_1, J(g_1, \tau))(h, J(h, \tau)) = (gh, J(gh, \tau)J(h, \tau))$. Here $\tau \mapsto J(g, \tau)$ is supposed to be a holomorphic function on $\mathcal{H}$. Thus we have the central extension $\mu_2 \hookrightarrow \overline{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \twoheadrightarrow SL_2(\mathbb{R})$ with $i(-1) = (1, -1)$ and $\pi(1, J) = g$. The center of $\overline{SL}_2$ is given by $\mu_2 \times \mu_2$.

Define a set-theoretic section $s : SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \hookrightarrow \overline{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ by $g \mapsto (g, j(g, \tau)^{1/2})$. Then $s(g)s(h) = (gh, a_\infty(a, h)j(j(g, \tau)^{1/2})$ for $a_\infty(a, h) = j(g, h(\tau)^{1/2}/j(h, \tau)^{1/2}) \in \{ \pm 1 \}$, since $j(g, \tau)$ is an automorphic factor. As $a_\infty$ is the coboundary of the $SL_2(\mathbb{R})$-1-chain $g \mapsto j(g, \tau)$ (under the pull-back action of $SL_2(\mathbb{R})$ on the $SL_2(\mathbb{R})$-module of holomorphic functions, $a_\infty$ is a factor set.
for $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ whose value can be made explicit as we will see below. The factor set defines the metaplectic covering $\mu_2 \hookrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \twoheadrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$. As Weil showed, we can extend this covering to $\mu_2 \hookrightarrow \tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}) \twoheadrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ so that the covering is trivial on $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ as described in §1.1. The map $\Gamma_0(4) \ni \gamma \mapsto (\gamma, h(\gamma, \tau)) \in \text{Mp}(\mathbb{R})$ is a group embedding.

There is an explicit description of the 2-cocycle $a_v(x, y)$ by T. Kubota [K67] giving the covering of $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v)$, for $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v)$, it is expressed by Hilbert’s symbol $(\cdot, \cdot)$ with values in $\mu_2$ [BNT, XIII.5], and the product formula [BNT, Proposition XIII.5.8] of Hilbert’s symbol provides the splitting over $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ (see [WRS, §2]). Here writing $x((a \ b \ c \ d)) = c$ or $d$ according as $c \neq 0$ or $c = 0$,

$$a_v(\gamma, \delta) = \frac{(x(\gamma), x(\delta))(-x(\gamma)^{-1}x(\delta), x(\gamma\delta))}. \quad (1.6)$$

For $\Gamma \subset \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$, we write $\tilde{\Gamma}$ for the closure of $\Gamma$ in $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$, and put $\tilde{\Gamma}(N) = \overline{\tilde{\Gamma}(N)}$ for $? = 0, 1$. To describe a splitting of $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \twoheadrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ over an open compact subgroup of $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}(\infty))$, we define $s_p : \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_p) \twoheadrightarrow \mu_2$ for a prime $p$ by

$$s_p\left((a \ b \ c \ d)\right) = \begin{cases} (c, d) & \text{if } cd \neq 0 \text{ and } \text{ord}_p(c) \equiv 1 \mod 2, \\ 1 & \text{otherwise}, \end{cases} \quad (1.5)$$

and for $\mathbb{Q}_\infty = \mathbb{R}$, $s_\infty := 1$ (the constant function). Then we modify $a_v$ as

$$\kappa_v(\gamma, \delta) = a_v(\gamma, \delta)s_v(\gamma)s_v(\delta)s_v(\gamma\delta)^{-1}. \quad (1.7)$$

The 2-cocycle $\kappa_v$ defines an isomorphic central extension $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ of $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v)$ by $\mu_2$. This modification makes $\kappa_v$ trivial on $\tilde{\Gamma}_1(4)$ [WRS, Proposition 2.8] and $\kappa(\gamma, \delta) = \prod_v \kappa_v(\gamma_v, \delta_v)$ makes sense for $(\gamma, \delta) \in \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$). Thus the product cocycle gives the metaplectic extension $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}(\infty)) \twoheadrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}(\infty))$.

We extend this to $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ by

$$\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}) = \{(g^{(\infty)}, x^{(\infty)}, J(g^{(\infty)}, \tau)) | (g^{(\infty)}, x^{(\infty)}) \in \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}(\infty)) \times \mu_2, (g^{(\infty)}, J(g^{(\infty)}, \tau)) \in \tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{R})\} \quad (1.6)$$

with the product given by

$$(g, x^{(\infty)}, J(g^{(\infty)}, \tau))(h, x^{(\infty)}o J(h^{(\infty)}, \tau)) = (gh, \kappa(\gamma, h)x^{(\infty)}, x^{(\infty)}o J(h^{(\infty)}, \tau)). \quad (1.7)$$

This definition is an amalgamation of Shimura’s definition of $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{R})$ in [Shi73] and that of $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A})$ by Kubota–Gelbart [WRS]. Shimura’s group is isomorphic to the metaplectic cover of $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ defined in [WRS, §2] by the cocycle $\kappa_\infty$ via sending the pair $(g, J(g^{(\infty)}, \tau)) \rightarrow (g, J(g^{(\infty)}, \tau)/(cz + d)^{1/2}) \in \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \mu_2$, since $(g, h) \mapsto j(g, h(\tau))^{1/2}/j(h, \tau)^{1/2}j(g, \tau)^{1/2}$ is the 2-cocycle $\kappa_\infty$ by (1.4). Indeed, by (1.4), $\kappa$ coincides with

$$\kappa^{(\infty)}(g, h)j(g^{(\infty)}, h^{(\infty)}o J(h^{(\infty)}, \tau))^{1/2}o j(h^{(\infty)}, \tau)^{1/2}o j(g^{(\infty)}, \tau)^{1/2}$$

on $\Gamma_1(4)$, and by strong approximation and triviality on $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \subset \tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A})$, they coincide on $\Gamma_1(4)\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ whose image in $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{R})$ is dense. The commutativity of the diagram (1.2) is clear from the above definition of $\tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A})$ adapted to theta series automorphic factors.

Sending the set theoretic product $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v) \times \mu_2$ into $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) \times \mu_2$ produces group homomorphism $\mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}_v) \twoheadrightarrow \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$. In particular, we have commutative diagrams

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mu_2 & \longrightarrow & \tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}) \\ \longrightarrow & \longrightarrow & \twoheadrightarrow \\ \mu_2 & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \end{array} \quad (1.6)$$

$$\begin{array}{ccc} \mu_2 & \longrightarrow & \tilde{\mathbf{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}) \\ \longrightarrow & \longrightarrow & \twoheadrightarrow \\ \mu_2 & \longrightarrow & \mathbf{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}(\infty)) \end{array} \quad (1.7)$$
Then we have $\widetilde{\text{SL}}_2(\mathbb{A}) = (\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)}) \times \widetilde{\text{SL}}_2(\mathbb{R}))/\Delta(\mu_2)$ for the diagonal embedding $\Delta : \mu_2 \rightarrow \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$.

For $g \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) (\pi(g) \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}))$, we write the projection to $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ as $g_\infty = (\pi(g)_\infty, J(\pi(g)_\infty))$. The map $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})(g) \mapsto (g, 1) \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ (for $g = \mathbb{Q}_v, \mathbb{A}^{(\infty)}$) is not a group homomorphism. We simply write $J(\pi(g)_\infty, \tau)$ for $J(\pi(g)_\infty, \tau)$ and $\pi(g)_\infty(\sqrt{-1}) = \pi(\pi(g)_\infty(\sqrt{-1}) \in \mathfrak{H}$. We put $C_\infty = \pi^{-1}(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ for the projection $\pi : \text{Mp} \rightarrow \text{SL}_2$.

We have a splitting $r_\mathbb{Q}$ over $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ into $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ as described in §1.1. Thus $\Gamma_0(4) \subset \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \subset \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ and a commutative diagram:

$$
\begin{array}{c}
\begin{array}{c}
\Gamma_1(4) \\
\Gamma_1(4)
\end{array}
\end{array}
\xrightarrow{\gamma \mapsto (\gamma, h(\gamma, \tau))} \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
$$

This inclusion of $\Gamma_1(4)$ extends to $\tilde{\Gamma}_1(4) \subset \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$ [WRS, Proposition 2.8], and we have a commutative diagram:

$$
\begin{array}{c}
\begin{array}{c}
\Gamma_1(4) \\
\Gamma_1(4)
\end{array}
\end{array}
\xrightarrow{\gamma \mapsto (\gamma, h(\gamma, \tau))} \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
$$

Since $h(\gamma, \tau)$ in (1.4) involves $\varepsilon_d \in \mu_4$ and $h((\frac{a}{c}, \frac{d}{d}) \tau^2 = (\frac{-1}{d}) (cz + d)$ for $(\frac{a}{c}, \frac{d}{d}) \in \Gamma_0(4)$, we can embed $\tilde{\Gamma}_0(4) \rightarrow \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ by $\gamma \rightarrow \gamma_\infty := (\gamma_\infty, h(\gamma_\infty, \tau))$. Since $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \rightarrow \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$, by $\Gamma_0(4) \ni \gamma \rightarrow \gamma_\infty^{-1}$, we get an embedding $\Gamma_0(4) \rightarrow \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$. Then we put $\tilde{\Gamma}_0(4) := \tilde{\Gamma}_1(4)\Gamma_0(4) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$.

Therefore

(1.8) we can lift the inclusion $\tilde{\Gamma}_1(4) \rightarrow \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$ to $\tilde{\Gamma}_0(4) \rightarrow \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$.

Define $\phi \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbb{A})$ by $\phi(x) = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } x(\infty) \not\in \mathbb{Z}_2, \\ e((x(\infty)) & \text{if } x(\infty) \in \mathbb{Z}_2. \end{cases}$ Let $\theta(g) := \sum_n w(g) \phi(g)$ for $g \in \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ taking the quadratic space $(\mathbb{Q}, x^2)$. By definition, for $\tau = \xi + \eta \sqrt{-1} \in \mathfrak{H}$ and $g_\tau = \eta^{-1/2} (\frac{g}{\xi}, \frac{\xi}{\gamma})$, $\theta(\tau) = \theta((g_\tau, \eta^{-1/4}) = \eta^{1/4} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} e(n^2 \tau)$. For $\gamma \in \Gamma_0(4)$, $\theta((g_\tau, \eta^{-1/4}) \gamma(\infty)) = \theta((\gamma^{-1}_\infty) (g_\tau, \eta^{-1/4}))$

$$= \theta((\gamma^{-1}_\infty, \theta(\gamma^{-1}(\tau))(g_\tau, \eta^{-1/4})) = \theta(g_{\gamma^{-1}(\tau)}(\theta(\gamma^{-1}(\tau)))/\theta(\tau))^{-1} = \theta(g_\tau).$$

Since we made splitting of $\pi_\mathbb{R} : \text{Mp}(\mathbb{R}) \rightarrow \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ over $\Gamma_0(4)$ by setting $h(\gamma, \tau) := \theta(\gamma(\tau))/\theta(\tau)$, the above argument is a tautology. Anyway, since $\tilde{\Gamma}_0(4)$ is a closure of $\Gamma_0(4)$ in $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)})$, the stability of $\theta$ under $\Gamma_0(4)$ implies

Lemma 1.2. The above theta function $\theta$ is fixed by the right multiplication by $\tilde{\Gamma}_0(4)$ embedded in $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$.

2. Rankin convolution

We describe adelic Rankin convolution in [LFE, Chapter 9].

2.1. Adelic Fourier expansion cusp forms of integral weight. Let $F \in \mathcal{S}_\kappa(\Gamma_0(4))$ be a cusp form of weight $\kappa$ for $0 < \kappa \in \mathbb{Z}$, where $\varphi$ is a Dirichlet character modulo $C$ and $\varphi((\frac{a}{c}, \frac{d}{d})) = \varphi(d)$ for $(\frac{a}{c}, \frac{d}{d}) \in \Gamma_0(4)$. Then $F(\gamma(\tau)) = \varphi(\gamma) F(\tau) j(\gamma, \tau)^{\kappa}$ for $j(\gamma, \tau)$ as in (1.4). The character $\varphi : \Gamma_0(4) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^\times$ extends to $\varphi : \tilde{\Gamma}_0(4) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^\times$ by continuity. Then $\varphi((\frac{a}{c}, \frac{d}{d})) = \varphi(d_C \mod CD) \times \mathbb{C}^\times$ for $\mathbb{C}^\times = \prod_{v|l=C} \mathbb{Q}_v$ and the projection $d_C$ of $d$ to $\mathbb{Q}_C := \prod_{v|l|C} \mathbb{Q}_v$. 

$$ADJUNCT L-VALUE AS A PERIOD INTEGRAL 8$$
Since $A^\times/Q^\times \mathbb{R}^+_\infty \cong \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \to C^\times$, we extend $\varphi$ to a character $\varphi^*: A^\times/Q^\times \to C^\times$ so that $\varphi^*(l) = \varphi(l)$ for primes $l \nmid C$ regarded in $Q^\times_i \subset A^\times$. We lift $F$ to $\mathbf{F}: \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash \text{SL}_2(\hat{\mathbb{A}}) \to \mathbb{C}$ by putting

$$F(\alpha u) = \varphi^*(u)^{-1}F(u(\sqrt{-1}))j(u, \sqrt{-1})^{-\kappa}$$

for $\alpha \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ and $u \in \hat{\Gamma}(C)\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ [H10, §1.1], where $\varphi^*(u)^{-1} = \varphi(u)$.

Define an idele character $\varphi: A^\times/Q^\times \to C^\times$ by $\varphi(a) = \varphi^*(a)|a|_\infty^{-\kappa}$. Write the Fourier expansion of $F$ as $F(\tau) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(F)\mathbf{e}(n\tau)$. For $g \in B(\hat{\mathbb{Z}})B(\mathbb{R})$ with $g = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ with $a \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}\mathbb{R}_+$, we find, for $\tau = g(\alpha) = a_2^2 t + ab_\infty$,

$$F(g) = \varphi^*(a(\infty)^{-1})a_\infty^{-\kappa} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(F)\mathbf{e}(n\tau) = \varphi^*(a) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(F) \exp(-2\pi n a_\infty^2)\mathbf{e}(n a_\infty b_\infty).$$

Recall the character $\mathbf{e}: \mathbb{Q}\backslash A \to C^\times$ defined by $\mathbf{e}(x) = \prod_{p} \mathbf{e}(x_p)$ with $\mathbf{e}(x_p) = \exp(-2\pi \sqrt{-1}|x_p|)$ if $v$ is a prime $l$ for the fraction part $|x_p|$, for the $l$-adic expansion of $x$ and $\mathbf{e}(x) = \exp(2\pi \sqrt{-1}x_\infty)$.

Let $v(\alpha) = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 1 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \in U(\hat{\mathbb{A}})$. Then for $b = v(\alpha)\text{diag}[a, a^{-1}] \in B(\hat{\mathbb{A}})$, write $\mathbf{F}(\alpha u) := \mathbf{F}(\alpha u)$. Since $\mathbf{F}(\alpha u + \alpha) = \mathbf{F}(\alpha u + \alpha)\mathbf{F}(\alpha u)\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}$, we have the adelic Fourier expansion of $\mathbf{F}(\alpha u)$ over $u \in \hat{\mathbb{A}}$:

$$\mathbf{F}(\alpha u) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha)\mathbf{e}(\alpha u).$$

By $\text{diag}[\beta, \beta^{-1}][v(\alpha)\text{diag}[a, a^{-1}]] = v(\beta^2 u)\text{diag}[\beta a, (\beta a)^{-1}],$ we have

$$\sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha)\mathbf{e}(\alpha u) = \mathbf{F}(\alpha u)\mathbf{F}(\beta a, \beta^2 u) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha)\mathbf{e}(\alpha^2 u).$$

From the uniqueness of the Fourier expansion, we conclude

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha) = a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha \beta^{-2}, \beta a) \text{ for } \beta \in \mathbb{Q}^\times \text{ and } \alpha \in \mathbb{Q},$$

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha) = \varphi^{-1}(a) a_\alpha(F) \exp(-2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2) \text{ if } 0 < \alpha \in \mathbb{Z} \text{ and } \alpha \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times.$$\n
By $\text{diag}[a, a^{-1}][v(t) \text{diag}[a, a^{-1}]] = v(u) \text{diag}[t, (ta)^{-1}]$, for $t \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$, we get

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(t a\alpha) = \varphi^{-1}(t) a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha a\alpha).$$

If $x \in \mathbb{Q}^\times(A^\times)^2 \cap A^\times$, choose $\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}$ and $a \in A^\times$ so that $x = \alpha a^2$, define

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(x) := \varphi(a) a_{\mathbf{F}}(a, \alpha) \exp(2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2 a_\infty^2) = a_{\alpha}(F),$$

which is equal to $a_{\alpha}(F)$ if $0 < \alpha \in \mathbb{Z}$ and $a \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$, and $a_{\mathbf{F}}(x) = 0$ if $x \notin \mathbb{Z} (\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \mathbb{R}^+_\infty)^2$.

If $aa^2(\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times)^2 = \beta \beta^2(\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times)^2$, then writing $aa^2 = \beta \beta^2$ for $t \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times$, we have

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(aa^2) := \varphi(a) a_{\mathbf{F}}(a, \alpha) \exp(2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2 a_\infty^2) = \varphi(a) a_{\mathbf{F}}(\alpha \beta^{-2}, \beta a) \exp(2\pi (\alpha a_\infty^2 a_\infty^2) (\beta a_\infty^2)) = \varphi(\beta a) a_{\mathbf{F}}(a \beta^{-2}, \beta a) \exp(2\pi (\alpha a_\infty^2 a_\infty^2) (\beta a_\infty^2),$$

since $\varphi(\beta a) = \varphi(a)$. By (2.3), this shows that $a_{\mathbf{F}}(x)$ is well defined independent of the choice of the expression $x = \alpha a^2$ with $a \in A^\times$ and $\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$.

By (2.5), we have

$$a_{\mathbf{F}}(x) = a_{\alpha}(F) = a_{\mathbf{F}}(xt^2) \text{ for } t \in \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \mathbb{R}^+_\infty \text{ and } x = \alpha a^2,$$

$$F(a, u) = F(u) \text{diag}[a, a^{-1}] = \varphi^{-1}(a) \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_{\mathbf{F}}(a a^2) \mathbf{e}(\alpha a_\infty^2 a_\infty^2 \sqrt{-1}) \mathbf{e}(\alpha u).$$

Since $a_{\mathbf{F}}$ is supported over $A^\times_\infty = (A^\times(\infty)) \times \mathbb{R}^+_\infty$, $a_{\mathbf{F}}$ only depends on the finite part of the idele.
2.2. Adelic Fourier expansion, cusp forms of half integral weight. We describe in detail the adelic Fourier expansion in case of half integral. Writing the level of a half integral weight modular form as $M$; so, $4|M$. Let $f \in S_k(\Gamma_0(M), \psi)$ be a cusp form of weight $\frac{k}{2}$ for odd $k$, where $\psi$ is an even Dirichlet character modulo $M$. Then $f(\gamma(\tau)) = \psi_1(\gamma)f(\tau)h(\gamma, \tau)^k$ for $\gamma \in \Gamma_0(M)$ and $h(\gamma, \tau)$ in (1.4), and as before $\psi_1(b \cdot \tau) = \psi(d)$ for $b \in \Gamma_0(M)$. The cusp form $f$ has its Fourier expansion: $f(\tau) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(f)e(n\tau)$. As before, we extend $\psi_1$ to a character of $\psi_1^*: \mathbb{A}^\times / \mathbb{Q}^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ and then $\psi_1^*$ to $\Gamma_0(M)$ so that $\psi_1^* (u) = \psi(u)^{-1}$. We lift $f$ to $\mathfrak{f}: \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})/\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C}$ by putting

$$f(\mathfrak{a}(u, \zeta(j(u, \tau)))) = \psi_1^*(u)f(u_\infty(\sqrt{-1}))\zeta^k(J(u_\infty, i)^{-k})$$

for $\mathfrak{a} \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ and $(u, J(u_\infty, \tau)) \in \Gamma_0(M)\text{Mp}(\mathbb{R}) \subset \mathcal{S}_2(\mathbb{A}) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ by (1.6).

Since $B(\mathbb{A})$ is canonically lifted into $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ by $\mathfrak{r}$ and this lifting coincides with the splitting $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \hookrightarrow \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ over $B(\mathbb{Q})$ as already remarked, we regard $B(\mathbb{A}) \subset \mathcal{S}_2(\mathbb{A}) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ and think of $f|_{B(\mathbb{A})}$. We get back to $f(\tau)$ by reversing the process:

$$f(\tau) := \mathfrak{f}(g_\tau, j(g_\tau, \tau)^{1/2})j(g_\tau, i)^{k/2} = \mathfrak{f}(g_\tau, \eta^{-1/2})\eta^{-k/4}$$

for $g_\tau = \eta^{-1/2}(\begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix})$, which is holomorphic in $\tau = \xi + \eta^{-1}$. Write $\theta: \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})/\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C}$ for the lift of $\theta(\tau) = \sum_n e(n^2\tau)$. We have an inclusion $\widehat{\Gamma}_0(4) \hookrightarrow \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ as in (1.8). Since $B(\mathbb{Z}) \subset \Gamma_0(4)$, we regard $B(\mathbb{Z}) \subset \mathcal{S}_2(\mathbb{A})$. This inclusion coincides over $B(\mathbb{Z})$ with the one induced by $\mathfrak{r}$ and hence matches with the inclusion $B(\mathbb{Q}) \hookrightarrow \mathcal{S}_2(\mathbb{A})$.

Define an idele character $\psi_1: \mathbb{A}^\times / \mathbb{Q}^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times$ by $\psi_1(\mathfrak{a}) = \psi_1^*(\mathfrak{a})|_\mathbb{A}^{-k/2}$. Thus for $\mathfrak{g} \in B(\mathbb{Z})B(\mathbb{R}) \subset \mathcal{S}_2(\mathbb{A})$ with $\mathfrak{g} = (\begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a \end{smallmatrix})$, from (2.7), we find for $\tau = a_\infty (a_\infty i + b_\infty)$

$$f(\mathfrak{g}) = \psi_1^{-1}(a) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(f)e(n\tau) = \psi_1^{-1}(a) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(f) \exp(-2\pi n a_\infty^2 e(n a_\infty b_\infty)).$$

Let $\nu(u) = (\begin{smallmatrix} 1 & u \\ 0 & 1 \end{smallmatrix}) \in U(\mathbb{A})$. Then we consider for a general $b = \nu(u) \text{diag}[a, a^{-1}] \in B(\mathbb{A})$. Write $\mathfrak{f}(a, u) := \mathfrak{f}(b)$. Then $\mathfrak{f}(a, u + \alpha) = \mathfrak{f}(\nu(u)\alpha) = \mathfrak{f}(b) \mathfrak{f}(b) = \mathfrak{f}(b)$ if $\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}$. Thus $\mathfrak{f}(a, u)$ has a Fourier expansion over $u \in \mathbb{A}$ of the form

$$\mathfrak{f}(a, u) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; a) e(\alpha u).$$

By $\text{diag}[\beta, \beta^{-1}] \nu(u) \text{diag}[\alpha, \beta^{-1}] = \nu(\beta^2 u) \text{diag}[\beta a, (\beta a)^{-1}]$, we have

$$\sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; a) e(\alpha u) = \mathfrak{f}(a, u) = \mathfrak{f}(\beta a, \beta^2 u) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}} a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; \beta a) e(\alpha \beta^2 u).$$

By the uniqueness of the Fourier expansion, we get

$$a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; a) = a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; \beta^2, \beta a) = \begin{cases} \psi_1^{-1}(a) \alpha_\mathfrak{f}(f) \exp(-2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2) & \text{if } 0 < \alpha \in \mathbb{Z}, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

By $\nu(u) \text{diag}[a, a^{-1}] \text{diag}[t, t^{-1}] = \nu(u) \text{diag}[\alpha a, (ta)^{-1}]$, for $t \in \mathbb{Z}^\times$, we get

$$a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha; at) = \psi_1^{-1}(t) a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha, a).$$

Define

$$a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha a^2) := \begin{cases} \psi_1(a) a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha, a) \exp(2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2) = a_\mathfrak{f}(f) & \text{if } \alpha a^2 \in \mathbb{Z}(\mathbb{Z}+\mathbb{R^+)})^2 \cap \mathbb{A}^\times, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Thus $a_\mathfrak{f}$ is supported over $\mathbb{Z}(\mathbb{Z}+\mathbb{R^+)})^2 \cap \mathbb{A}^\times$. If $\alpha a^2(\mathbb{Z}^2) = \beta b^2(\mathbb{Z}^2)^2$, then writing $\alpha a^2 a^2 = \beta b^2 b^2$ for $t \in \mathbb{Z}^\times$, we have

$$a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha a^2) := \psi_1(a) a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha, a) \exp(2\pi \alpha a_\infty^2) = \psi_1(a) a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha \beta^{-2}, \beta a) \exp(2\pi (\alpha a_\infty^2) (\alpha \beta^{-2}) (\beta a)^2)$$

$$= \psi_1(\beta a) a_\mathfrak{f}(\alpha \beta^{-2}, \beta a) \exp(2\pi (\alpha a_\infty^2) (\beta a)^2),$$

since $\psi_1(\beta a) = \psi_1(a)$. This shows that $a_\mathfrak{f}(x)$ is well defined independent of the choice of the expression $x = \alpha a^2$ with $a \in \mathbb{A}^\times$ and $\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}^\times$. 
By (2.10), we have
\begin{equation}
\Phi(z, u) = \Phi(u, i) = \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} n \nu_n^{\epsilon(z)} e(n^2 \tau).
\end{equation}

Note that $\Phi(z, u) \in S(\chi_2)(\Gamma_0(4, N^2))$ [Sh73, Proposition 2.2], where $\chi_2(d) = \chi\left(\frac{d}{\ell}\right)^{\epsilon(z)}$ and $[4, N^2]$ is the LCM of 4 and $N^2$. Then $\Phi(z, u)$ is right invariant under $\Gamma_0(4, N^2)$.

(2.13) Taking $a \equiv n \mod N$, we find $a\Phi(z, u)(a^2) = \chi(n)|n|^{\epsilon(z)}$ and $a\Phi(z, u)(a^2) = 0$ if $x \not\in (\mathbb{Z})^2$.

Define for an integer $r \geq 0$ and $d = q\frac{d}{\sigma_q} = 2\pi i \frac{d}{\tau}$
\begin{equation}
\theta_j(z, u) = \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \chi(n)n^{\epsilon(z)} e(n^2 \tau) \quad \text{and} \quad \theta_j(z, u) = d^r \Phi(z, u) \quad \text{if} \quad j = \epsilon(z) + 2r.
\end{equation}

If the parity of $j$ and $\epsilon(z)$ does not match, $\theta_j(z, u) = 0$.

2.3. Eisenstein series. For the projection $\pi_X : \text{Mp}(X) \to \text{SL}_2(X)$, write $C_{\infty} := \pi_{R,-1}(SO(2)) \subset \text{Mp}(R) \subset \text{Mp}(A)$ and $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{Z}) := \pi_{A,-1}(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}))$. We have $B(A)\text{Mp}(\mathbb{Z})C_{\infty} = \text{Mp}(A)$ by Iwasawa decomposition.

Moreover, $B(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(\mathbb{Z}) \cong B(\mathbb{Q})/B(\mathbb{Q}) = (A^\times/\mathbb{Q}) \times (A/\mathbb{Q})$. Since $\mathbb{Z} \times [0,1)$ is the fundamental domain of the translation action of $\mathbb{Q}$ on $A$, $A/\mathbb{Q}$ is compact. Since $\mathbb{A}^\times = \mathbb{Z}^\times \mathbb{Q}^\times$, we find $A^\times/\mathbb{Q}^\times \cong \mathbb{Z}^\times \times \mathbb{R}_+$. Thus $B(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(\mathbb{Z}) \cong \mathbb{Z}^\times \times \mathbb{R}_+ \times \Gamma_{\infty} \backslash \hat{\Gamma}$ for $\Gamma_{\infty} := \{ \pm \left( \frac{1}{m} \right) \} | m \in \mathbb{Z}$. Write $S^1 = \{ z \in \mathbb{C}^\times : |z| = 1 \}$ for the center of $\text{Mp}(X)$ (independent of the choice of $X$). Let $\mathcal{E} : B(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(A) \to C$ be a continuous function such that

1. if $z \in S^1$, $\Phi(z, u) = \chi(z)\Phi(u)\Phi(g)$ for a continuous character $\chi : S^1 \to C^\times$.
2. For $u$ in an open subgroup $\hat{\Gamma} \subset \hat{\Gamma}_{0}(4)$, $\Phi(gu) = \phi(u)\Phi(g)$ for a character $\phi : \hat{\Gamma} \to C^\times$.
3. $\Phi(gu, \zeta J(u, \tau)) = \Phi(gu)\zeta^\ell J(u, \tau)$ for $(u, \zeta J(u, \tau)) \in C_{\infty}$, where $\ell$ is an integer.

If $\zeta \in S^1$, the above conditions imply $\chi(z) = \zeta^\ell$ as long as $\Phi \neq 0$. Thus $\chi(z) = \zeta^\ell$ can be a good choice. In the same manner, we have $\phi(u) = \chi(\zeta)$ for $u \in S^1 \cap \hat{\Gamma}$.

Assuming an absolute and local uniform convergence, we define
\begin{equation}
E(\Phi)(g) := \sum_{\gamma \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})} \Phi(\gamma g) \quad (g \in \text{Mp}(A)).
\end{equation}

Then, as a function of $g \in \text{Mp}(A)$, $E(\Phi)$ satisfies $E(\Phi)(\zeta g u) = \chi(\zeta)\phi(u)\Phi(g)J(u, \tau)$ for $\zeta \in S^1$, $\gamma \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})$ and $u \in \hat{\Gamma}C_{\infty}$ with infinity part $(u, \zeta J(u, \tau))$.

Writing $\pi(g) = bu (b \in \text{Mp}(A)$ and $u \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})SO(2))$ for $g \in \text{SL}_2(A)$, we define $|a(g)|_A$ by $|a|_{\mathbb{A}}$ if $b = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{smallmatrix} \right)$. This function does not depend on the choice of the decomposition and factors through $B(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(A)$. For $s \in \mathbb{C}$, we define $\Phi_s(g) = \Phi(g)|a(g)|_A^s$. We assume that

A. $E(\Phi_s)$ converges absolutely and locally uniformly if $\text{Re}(s) > 0$ and continued to a meromorphic function of $s$ over the entire $\mathbb{C}$.

The meromorphin (A) means that for any $s_0 \in \mathbb{C}$, there exists an open neighborhood $U_{s_0}$ of $s_0$ and a holomorphic function $h : U_{s_0} \subset \mathbb{C}$ such that $s \mapsto h(s)E(\Phi_s)(g)$ is a holomorphic function of $s \in U_{s_0}$ for each $g$. 

2.4. Adelic Rankin product, integral weight versus half integral weight. We keep assuming 4|M. We pick \( C|M \). As in \( \S 2.1 \), let \( F \) be an integral weight cusp form in \( S_\chi(C, \varphi) \), and using \( \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) = \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \), lift it to \( \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})/\mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) \) as in \( \S 2.1 \) by
\[
\mathbf{F}(\alpha u) = \varphi^*(u^{-\infty}) F(\gamma(u)^{\sqrt{-1}}) j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
\]

Let \( \tilde{F}(z) = F(\tau) \). Then \( \tilde{F} \) is an anti-holomorphic cusp form in \( S_\chi^c(C, \varphi) \), where \( S_\chi^c(C, \varphi) \) is made up of anti-holomorphic cusp forms \( G : \mathfrak{H} \to \mathbb{C} \) satisfying \( G(\gamma(\tau)) = \varphi(\gamma) G(z) j(\gamma, \tau)^k \) for \( \gamma \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \).

Lift \( \tilde{F} \) to \( \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) \) by \( \tilde{F}(g) = \varphi^*(u) \tilde{F}(\gamma(u)^{\sqrt{-1}}) j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \). Since \( \tilde{F}(\frac{a+b}{c+\tau d}) = \varphi(d) \tilde{F}(z)(c\tau+d)^k \) for \( \gamma = \left( \begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ c & d \end{array} \right) \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \), we have
\[
\tilde{F}(\gamma gu) = \varphi^*(u) \tilde{F}(g) j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \mathrm{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}).
\]

Pick a half integral cusp form \( \bar{f} \in S_{k/2}(\Gamma_0(M), \psi) \) and lift it to \( f : \mathrm{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})/\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C} \) as in \( \S 2.2 \); so, we have
\[
f(\gamma gu) = \varphi^*(u) \bar{f}(g) j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) \mathrm{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}).
\]

Take a continuous \( \Phi : B(\mathbb{Q})/\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C} \) and consider
\[
(\Phi(x) \left( \begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ c & d \end{array} \right)) = (\Phi(x))^k j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(M),
\]
\[
\Phi(x) = \Phi(\gamma gu) = \varphi(x)^{-k} j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(M),
\]
\[
\Phi(B\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{A}^\infty)) = \Phi(B\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{A}^\infty)) j(u^{-\infty}, -\sqrt{-1}-\infty) \quad \text{for} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(M).
\]

For the moment, we suppose \( \Phi(1) \). Then we have
\[
f(g) \bar{f}(g) = f(g) \bar{f}(g) \quad \text{for all} \ u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \mathbb{C}.
\]

This follows from the above properties \( \Phi(1) \) of \( \Phi \) and \( (2.15) \) and \( (2.15) \).

Take an open compact subgroup \( \hat{\Gamma} \supset \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \) inside \( \mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^\infty) \). Consider the space \( \mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma}) := B(\mathbb{Q})/\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \setminus \{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} \). Since \( B(\mathbb{A})/\{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} \setminus / \{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} = B(\mathbb{A})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} \setminus \{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \), we have
\[
\mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma}) = B(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} \setminus / \{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} = B(\mathbb{Q})/\{ \pm 1 \} \hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \setminus \{ 0 \} \times \mathbb{R}.
\]

Let \( \hat{\Gamma}_0 := B(\mathbb{A}) \setminus \hat{\Gamma} \). Defining \( \mathrm{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}_0/\hat{\Gamma}_0(M)}(g) := \sum_{u \in \hat{\Gamma}_0/\hat{\Gamma}_0(M)} \Phi(gu) \) if \( \Phi(gu) \) is invariant under \( \hat{\Gamma} \supset \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \), we find \( \int_{\mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma}_0(M))} f(g) \bar{f}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{\mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma})} f(g) \bar{f}(g) \mathrm{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}_0/\hat{\Gamma}_0(M)}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) \).

Similarly \( \Phi f \) is right-invariant under \( \hat{\Gamma} \supset \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \), we have
\[
\int_{\mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma}_0(M))} f(g) \bar{f}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{\mathcal{F}_\infty(\hat{\Gamma})} f(g) \Phi(f) d\mu(g).
\]

Therefore, as long as \( \hat{\Gamma}_0 = \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \), we do not worry much about the group fixing \( f \) and \( \Phi(f) \). In particular, since \( \hat{\Gamma}_0(C) = \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \), as long as \( C|M \), the convolution integral is well defined.

**Lemma 2.1.** The natural map \( \pi_1 : B(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{C} \to SL_2(\mathbb{Q})/\mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \) is an isomorphism.

This is an adelic analogue of \( B(\mathbb{R})/B(\mathbb{R})(\mathbb{R}^\times) = S_\infty \) map for any subgroup \( \Gamma \subset SL_2(\mathbb{Z}) \) with closure \( \bar{\Gamma} \subset SL_2(\mathbb{A}). \)

**Proof.** Since \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q})K = SL_2(\mathbb{A}) \) for any open subgroup \( K \) of \( \hat{\Gamma}_0(4) \) (strong approximation) and \( B(\mathbb{R})C_{\infty} = \mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{R}) \) (Iwasawa decomposition), we have \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q})B(\mathbb{A})KC_{\infty} = \mathrm{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \). Thus we have a natural continuous surjection, sending \( b \in B(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{A} \) to its class in \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{A} \)
\[
\pi_K : B_K := B(\mathbb{Q})/B(\mathbb{A})KC_{\infty} \to SL_2(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{A} = SL_2(\mathbb{Q})/SL_2(\mathbb{Q})B(\mathbb{A})KC_{\infty}.
\]

Thus we have a continuous map
\[
\pi_1 : B_1 = \lim_{\hat{\Gamma}_0 \to B(\mathbb{A})} \mathbb{Q}_1 \to SL_2(\mathbb{Q})/\hat{\Gamma} \mathbb{A}.
\]

For an open subgroup \( K' \subset K \), \( \pi_K^{K'K} : B(\mathbb{Q})/B(\mathbb{A})K'C_{\infty} \to B(\mathbb{Q})/B(\mathbb{A})KC_{\infty} \) is a finite map, thus for each compact subset \( X \) of \( B_K \), \( \pi_1^{-1}(X) \) is compact surjecting down to \( X \) and hence \( \pi_1^{-1}(X) = \lim_{K' \to K} \pi_1^{K'K}(X) \) is compact and non-empty. Thus the projection \( B_1 \to B_K \) is onto.
If X is open compact, \( \pi_1^{-1}(X) \) is open compact; so, \( B_1 \) is locally compact. Since \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \) is locally compact with dense image in the locally compact space \( B_1 \), we see that \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \to B_1 \). Since \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \) is discrete in \( B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \), we find \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \cong B_1 \). Identifying \( B_1 \) and \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \), we find \( \pi_1 : B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \to SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(A) \) is a continuous morphism with dense image of locally compact spaces; so, \( \pi_1 \) is onto. If \( \pi_1(b) = \pi_1(b') \) for \( b, b' \in B(\mathbb{A}) \), then \( \gamma b = b'u \) for \( \gamma \in SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \) and \( u \in B(\hat{\mathbb{Z}})C_{\infty} \). By projecting down to \( SL_2(\mathbb{A}) \), we find \( \gamma b = b' \pi_1(u) \), comparing the finite part, we conclude \( \gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \); so, we find \( \pi_1 \) is an isomorphism. \( \square \)

**Remark 2.2.** For an open compact subgroup \( K \) of \( Mp(\hat{A}(\infty)) \) and regarding \( K \subset Mp(\hat{A}(\infty)) \) by the natural inclusion \( Mp(\hat{A}(\infty)) \to Mp(\hat{A}) \), \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(\hat{A})/KC_{\infty} \) is a modular curve \( \Gamma_K \backslash \mathfrak{H} \). Similarly \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty}/(K \cap B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty}) = (\Gamma_K \cap B(\mathbb{Q})) \backslash \mathfrak{H} \), which is an infinite covering of \( \Gamma_K \backslash \mathfrak{H} \).

By Lemma 2.1, choose a fundamental domain \( \mathcal{F} \) of \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(\hat{A})/\Gamma_0(\mathbb{M}) \) so that

\[
\mathcal{F} \subset B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash C_{\infty} B(\mathbb{A})/C_{\infty} \Gamma_0(\mathbb{M}) = B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})/B(\hat{\mathbb{Z}}) \cong [0, 1) \times \mathbb{R}_+^\times \subset \mathfrak{H}.
\]

Consider \( \bigcup_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} \gamma \mathcal{F} \) which is a fundamental domain of \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(\hat{A})/C_{\infty} \Gamma_0(\mathbb{M}) \). Since \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) = B(\mathbb{Q}) \cup B(\mathbb{Q}) \cap B(\hat{A})/B(\mathbb{Z}) \), we find

\[
B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \Gamma_0(\mathbb{M})/C_{\infty} \Gamma_0(\mathbb{M}) = B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})/B(\hat{\mathbb{Z}}) \cup T(\mathbb{Q}) \cap B(\hat{A})/B(\mathbb{Z}).
\]

Taking the invariant measure \( d\mu \) on \( Mp(\hat{A}) \) inducing the Dirac measure on each point in \( SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \) with \( \int_{Mp(\hat{A})} d\mu = 1 \), we have

\[
\int_{SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash Mp(\hat{A})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) E(\Phi)(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{\mathcal{F}} \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} f(\gamma g) \hat{F}(\gamma g) \Phi(\gamma g) d\mu(g)
\]

\[
= \int_{\mathcal{F}} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) + \int_{T(\mathbb{Q}) \cap B(\hat{A})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g).
\]

We assume

\[
(V) \int_{T(\mathbb{Q}) \cap B(\hat{A})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) = 0 \quad (\Leftrightarrow \Phi|_{JB(\hat{A})} = 0).
\]

The Rankin convolution is often computed when \( F \) is integrated against the Eisenstein series of the infinity cusp. The integral in (V) corresponds with \( (\Phi_3) \) in addition to \( (\Phi_1–2) \). We continue computation:

\[
L(s) = \int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})C_{\infty} \Gamma_0(\mathbb{M})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A})/B(\hat{\mathbb{Z}})} f(g) \hat{F}(g) \Phi(g) d\mu(b).
\]

Suppose \( (\Phi_3) \) in addition to \( (\Phi_1–2) \). We continue computation:

\[
L(s) = \sum_{\alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{Q}} \int_{\mathbb{A}^+ / \mathbb{Q}^+} \int_{\mathbb{A} / \mathbb{Q}} a_F(\alpha a^2) a_F(\beta^2) e((\alpha + \beta) a) \exp(-2\pi(-\alpha_{\infty} + \beta_{\infty}) a^2) du |a|^{2s-1} da
\]

\[
= \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Q}^+} \int_{\mathbb{A}^+ / \mathbb{Q}^+} a_F(\alpha a^2) a_F(\alpha^2) \exp(-4\pi\alpha_{\infty} a^2) |a|^{2s-1} da.
\]
By (2.2) and (2.8) with variable change: $t = a_n^2$, we get

$$L(s) = 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \int_0^{\infty} a_n(t) a_n(t) \exp(-4\pi nt)|t|^s t^{-1} dt = 2(4\pi)^{-s}\Gamma(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(t) a_n(t)n^{-s} = 2(4\pi)^{-s}\Gamma(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(t) a_n(t)n^{-s}. $$

Here the identity $(\ast)$ involves the interchange: $\sum_{\alpha,\beta \in \mathbb{Q}} \int_{\mathbb{A}^x \mathbb{Q}^x} = \int_{\mathbb{A}^x \mathbb{Q}^x} \sum_{\alpha,\beta \in \mathbb{Q}^x}$ which is justified as long as the two sides are absolutely convergent. Thus we have

**Theorem 2.3.** Let the notation be as above. Suppose $(\Phi_1-3)$ and $(V)$. Then

$$\int_{\Gamma} f(g) \tilde{F}(g) E(\Phi)(g) d\mu(g) = 2(4\pi)^{-s}\Gamma(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(t) a_n(t)n^{-s}. $$

2.5. Adelic Rankin product of mixed weight. For a function $\phi : \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C}$ and a compact subgroup $K$ of $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$, if $\phi(gu) = \phi(g)\chi(u)$ ($u \in K$) for a character $\chi : K \to \mathbb{C}^\times$, the character $\chi$ is called the $K$-type of $\phi$. If there is no such character, we say that $\phi$ has mixed $K$-type. If $K = \mathbb{C}$ and $\phi$ is a compact subgroup $K$ of $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$, $K$ is a two-fold covering of $\text{SO}(\mathbb{A}) \text{iso}$ morphic to $S^1$; so, for $c \in K$, we have $c^2 = r(\theta)$ with $r(\theta) = \left( \begin{array}{cc} \cos(\theta) & -\sin(\theta) \\ \sin(\theta) & \cos(\theta) \end{array} \right) \in \text{SO}(\mathbb{R})$. If $\chi(c^2) = e^{\sqrt{-1}\pi}$ for an integer $k$, we say that $\phi$ has weight $k/2$ if it has $K$-type given by $\chi$ as above. The integer $k$ is odd if $\chi$ is non-trivial on $\text{Ker}(\pi : K \to \text{SO}(\mathbb{R})) \cong \{ \pm 1 \}$. The following remark will not be referred to in this paper.

**Remark 2.4.** The theta series $\theta_j(\chi)$ has mixed $C_\infty$-type if $j > 1$. We can decompose $\theta_j(\chi)$ as a sum of non-holomorphic modular forms with $C_\infty$-type using a formula relating Shimura–Maass differential operators and Ramanujan differential operators $d^2 \over dt^2$ [LFE, Chapter 10, (3)]. Since we do not need the exact formula, we do not recall the formula.

**Lemma 2.5.** For an open subgroup $\hat{\Gamma} \subset \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$, we have a disjoint decomposition

$$\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \text{SL}_2(\hat{\mathbb{A}})/\hat{\Gamma} \cdot \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) = \coprod_{u \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})/\hat{\Gamma}} B(\mathbb{Q})\backslash B(\mathbb{A})u\hat{\Gamma} \cdot \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})/\hat{\Gamma} \cdot \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}).$$

**Proof.** By Iwasawa decomposition, we have $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A}) = B(\mathbb{A})\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})$. From this, the decomposition in the lemma is clear. □

For an open subgroup $\hat{\Gamma}$ of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$ and a right $\hat{\Gamma}$-invariant function $f : \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q}) \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) \to \mathbb{C}$, we define the trace $\text{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}}(f)(g) = \sum_{u \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})/\hat{\Gamma}} f(ugu)$ which is a right $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$-invariant function. We apply also this operator to $f : \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \to \mathbb{C}$ as long as $f$ factors through the quotient $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$. For two open compact subgroups $\hat{\Gamma}$ and $\hat{\Gamma}'$, we have

$$(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) : \hat{\Gamma})^{-1}\text{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}}(f) = (\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z}) : \hat{\Gamma}')^{-1}\text{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}'}(f)$$

as long as the two sides are well defined; so, we just write the condition $\text{Tr}_{\hat{\Gamma}}(f) = 0$ as $\text{Tr}(f) = 0$ choosing $\hat{\Gamma}$ sufficiently small.

Now suppose that we have a finite set of cusp forms $\{f_j\}$ on $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ which have $\hat{\Gamma}_0(\mathbb{M})$-type $\psi^*$ but may have a mixed $C_\infty$-type. We assume the index set of $j$ is integers $[0, k] \cap \mathbb{Z}$ for $0 < k \in \mathbb{Z}$. We assume that the right translations of $f_j$ by $\mathbb{C}$ span a finite dimensional space of functions on $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$. Thus $f_j$ is a finite sum of cusp forms of different $C_\infty$-types. For example, $f_j$ can be $\theta_{x,j}$ for $0 \leq j$. We suppose to have $\{f_j\}$ satisfying $(V)$, $(\Phi_1)$ and $(\Phi_3)$ but possibly not $(\Phi_2)$. Instead we suppose

$(\Phi_0)$ $\text{Tr}(\tilde{F} \sum_j f_j E(\Phi_j)) \neq 0$ (i.e., the $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{A})$-representation generated by the right translations of $\tilde{F} \sum_j f_j E(\Phi_j)$ by $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$ contains the trivial representation of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$),

$(\Phi)$ $\text{f}_0|_{B(\mathbb{A})}$ has Fourier expansion as in (2.9) for the index 0.

The condition $(\Phi_0)$ means the following matching condition:
(M) the irreducible cuspidal automorphic representation $\pi_F$ generated by $\tilde{F}$ has $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$-type which is a contragredient of one of the $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$-types of the automorphic representation generated by the set $\{f_j E(\Phi_j)\}_j$.

Example 2.1. Here is an example of $\{f_j\}_j$ and $\{\Phi_j\}_j$ satisfying (Φ0–1) and (Φ3) with (F). Let $(V,Q)$ be a quadratic space with a decomposition $(V,Q) = (\mathbb{Q},x^2) \oplus (W,Q')$ as a quadratic space. Take a Schwartz–Bruhat function $\phi$ on $V_\lambda$ and suppose that the Siegel–Weil theta series $\theta(\phi)$ has $\Gamma_0(M)$-type $\psi^*$ and a unique $C_\infty$-type $k$.

1. $\phi = \phi(\infty) \otimes \phi_\infty$ for a Bruhat function $\phi(\infty)$ and a Schwartz function $\phi_\infty$,
2. $\phi = \sum_j \phi_{Q,j} \otimes \phi_{W,j}$ for Schwartz functions $\phi_{Q,j}$ and $\phi_{W,j}$ on $\mathbb{R}$ and $W(\mathbb{R})$, respectively,
3. $\phi(\infty) = \phi_Q(\infty) \otimes \phi_W(\infty)$ for Bruhat functions on $A(\infty)$ and $W(A(\infty))$, respectively,
4. $\phi_{Q,j}(x) = x^j \exp(-\pi x^2)$.

Let $\phi_X := \phi(\infty) \otimes \phi_{X,j}$ for $X = Q,W$. We have a natural diagonal embedding of $O_Q \times O_W$ into $O_V$. Note that $O_Q = \{\pm 1\}$; so, we forget about it. Then we write $\theta(\phi)(g,h) = \sum_{j=0}^k \theta(\phi_j^Q)(g)\theta(\phi_j^W)(g,h)$ for $g \in Mp(A)$ and $h \in O_W(A)$. Consider

$$\int_{O_W(Q)\backslash O_W(A)} \theta(\phi_j^W)(g,h) d\mu(h).$$

By the Siegel–Weil formula, for $\Phi_j(g) = (w_W(g)\phi_j^W)(0)$ as a function on $B(\mathbb{Q})\backslash Mp(A)$, this integral is proportional to the Eisenstein series $E(\Phi_j)$. Ignoring the proportion,

$$\Theta(g) := \int_{O_W(Q)\backslash O_W(A)} \theta(\phi)(g,h) d\mu(h) = \sum_j \theta(\phi_j^Q)(g) \int_{O_W(Q)\backslash O_W(A)} \theta(\phi_j^W) d\mu(h) = \sum_j \theta(\phi_j^Q) E(\Phi_j)$$

is a modular form whose $\Gamma_0(M)$-type is given by $\psi^*$ and has weight $k$ as $C_\infty$-type. However $\theta(\phi_j^Q)$ with $j > 1$ does not have a $C_\infty$-type. We compute $\sum_j \theta(\phi_j^Q)(gu) E(\Phi_j)(gu)$ for $u \in C_\infty$:

$$\sum_j \theta(\phi_j^Q)(gu) E(\Phi_j)(gu) = \int_{O_W(Q)\backslash O_W(A)} \theta(\phi)(gu,h) d\mu(h)$$

$$= \int_{O_W(Q)\backslash O_W(A)} \theta(\phi)(g,h) j(u,i)^{-k} d\mu(h) = \sum_j \theta(\phi_j^Q)(g) E(\Phi_j)(g) j(u,i)^{-k}.$$

Thus choosing a cusp form $F$ with the inverse $\Gamma_0(M)C_\infty$-type and putting $f_j = \theta(\phi_j^Q)$, the pair $\{f_j, \Phi_j\}_j$ satisfies the required conditions (Φ0) and (F).

If the automorphic representation of $SL_2(A)$ generated by the theta descent

$$\theta_*(f) := \int_{O_V(Q)\backslash O_V(A)} \theta(\phi)(g,h) f(h) d\mu(h)$$

of any cusp form $f$ on $D_\mathbb{A}^\times$ does not contain the automorphic representation $\pi_F$, the matching condition (M) could fail. For example, if $F$ has level 1 (i.e., principal everywhere) and $V = D$ for a division quaternion ramified at a prime $q$ with a Bruhat function $\phi(\infty)$ of $\tilde{R}$ for a maximal order $R$ of $D$, irreducible factors of the representation generated by $\theta_*(f)$ is special at $q$, and by the new form theory, it does not have the identity representation as $SL_2(\mathbb{Z}_q)$-type; so, $\text{Tr}(F \theta_*(f)) = 0$. Since any $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$-type of $\sum_j \theta(\phi_j) E(\Phi_j)$ would appear as one of the $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$-type of the theta descent $\theta_*(f)$ for some $f$, perhaps this implies the failure of the matching condition (M); i.e., the theta lift of $\pi_F$ by $\theta(\phi)$ would vanish, and also the Rankin product (2.21) by the identity at (2). Another caution is that, to have (V), we need to choose $\phi_j$ carefully.
Noting the fundamental domain $\mathcal{F}$ is chosen in $B(\mathbb{R})$, we reverse the earlier computation in (2.19):

\[(2.21) \quad \int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus B(\mathbb{A})/(B(\mathbb{A}) \cap \tilde{\Gamma}_0(M)/C_{\infty})} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) \Phi_j(g) d\mu(g) = \int_{\mathcal{F}} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) \Phi_j(g) d\mu(g) \]

\[= \int_{\mathcal{F}} \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} \tilde{F}(\gamma g) \sum_j f_j(\gamma g) \Phi_j(\gamma g) d\mu(g) = \int_{\mathcal{F}} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} \Phi_j(\gamma g) d\mu(g) \]

\[\overset{(1)}{=} \int_{X_0(M)} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) E(\Phi_j)(g) d\mu(g) \overset{(2)}{=} \int_{X_0(1)} \text{Tr}(\tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) E(\Phi_j)(g)) d\mu(g). \]

Before reaching identity (1), the computation is done inside $B(\mathbb{A})$, and we do not need left $C_{\infty}$-invariance of $\tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) \Phi_j(g)$. The integral is extended from $B(\mathbb{A})$ to entire $\text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})$ by the left $SL_2(\mathbb{Z})C_{\infty}$-invariance of $\text{Tr}(\tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) E(\Phi_j)(g))$ in $(\Phi_0)$, and we replace $\mathcal{F}$ by the isomorphic

\[SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A})/\tilde{\Gamma}_0(1) \cong = SL_2(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus SL_2(\mathbb{A})/\tilde{\Gamma}_0(M) \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) = X_0(M) \]

at the identity (1).

**Theorem 2.6.** In addition to $(\Phi_0-1)$, $(V)$ for all $\Phi_j$ and $(F)$, assume

\[\text{(Key)} \quad \Phi_{0|B(\mathbb{A})} \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{smallmatrix} \right) = \chi(a)|a|_\mathbb{A}^2 \text{ with a character } \chi : \mathbb{A}^\times / \mathbb{Q}^\times \to \mathbb{C}^\times \text{ for } a \in \mathbb{A}^\times \text{ and } b \in \mathbb{A} \text{ and } \Phi_j|_{B(\mathbb{A})} = 0 \text{ if } j \neq 0. \]

Then, assuming the Fourier expansion of $f_0(g \tau)$ has the following form: $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n(f_0) e(nz)$, we have

\[\int_{X_0(M)} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) E(\Phi_j)(g) d\mu(g) = 2(4\pi)^{-s} \Gamma(s) \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(F) a_n(f_0) n^{-s}. \]

Without the assumption (Key), the convolution integral would produce a sum of $L$-values (possibly evaluation points shifted). Thus (Key) is a purity condition in the mixed weight case.

**Proof.** By (2.21), we compute $\int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus B(\mathbb{A})/(B(\mathbb{A}) \cap \tilde{\Gamma}_0(M)/C_{\infty})} \tilde{F}(g) \sum_j f_j(g) \Phi_j(g) d\mu(g)$. By (Key), this integral is reduced to $\int_{B(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus B(\mathbb{A})/(B(\mathbb{A}) \cap \tilde{\Gamma}_0(M)/C_{\infty})} \tilde{F}(b) f_0(b)(a(b)|_\mathbb{A}^2) d\mu(b)$. Then by the same computation as in (2.20), replacing $f$ in (2.20) by $f_0$, we get the desired formula. \(\square\)

Note here $f_0$ in the above proof can have a mixed $C_{\infty}$-type. It can be a finite sum of cusp forms with different irreducible $C_{\infty}$-type as in Remark 2.4.

### 3. Quadratic space over $\mathbb{Q}$

Let $V$ be a finite dimensional $\mathbb{Q}$-vector space with a quadratic form $Q : V \to \mathbb{Q}$. The corresponding symmetric bilinear form $s$ is given by $s(x, y) = Q(x + y) - Q(x) - Q(y)$ or equivalently $2Q(v) = s(v, v) =: S[v]$. For a $\mathbb{Q}$-algebra $A$, we write $V_A := V \otimes \mathbb{Q} A$ as a quadratic space over $A$. We let the orthogonal group $O_V$ of $V$ act on $V$ from the right.

Let $E/\mathbb{Q}$ be a semi-simple quadratic extension $\mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{\Delta}]$ with integer ring $O_E$ and $D$ be a quaternion algebra over $\mathbb{Q}$. If $E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}$, we take $\sqrt{\Delta} = (1, -1)$ and hence $\Delta = 1 \in \mathbb{Q}$. Write $\sigma \in \text{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q})$ for the non-trivial $\mathbb{Q}$-automorphism of $E/\mathbb{Q}$. Put $D_E = D \otimes E$, and extend $\sigma$ to $D_E$ by $\sigma(d \otimes e) = d \otimes \sigma(e)$ for $d \in D$ and $e \in E$. We write $N : D_E \to E$ (resp. $\text{Tr} : D_E \to E$) for the reduced norm (resp. trace) map which induces the reduced norm (resp. trace) map $D \to \mathbb{Q}$. The main involution of $D_E$ is denoted by $x \mapsto x^*$, so, $x^* = \text{Tr}(x) - x = N(x)x^{-1}$. Define $D_{\sigma} = D_{\sigma}^x := \{ x \in D_E | x^x = \pm x \}$. We fix a pair of maximal orders $R \subset D$ and $R_E \subset D_E$ such that $R \otimes \mathbb{Z} O_E \subset R_E$. Let $K$ be a quadratic subfield of $D$. We write $\mathbb{H}$ for the Hamilton quaternion algebra over $\mathbb{R}$.

#### 3.1. List of quadratic spaces we study.

We study the following low dimensional quadratic spaces $(V, Q)$ over $\mathbb{Q}$. Here we write as before $m$ for the dimension of the quadratic space $V$ over $\mathbb{Q}$.

$\begin{align*}
(D^\pm) & \quad \text{Let } V = D \text{ and } Q(x) = \pm xx^* = \pm N(x) \text{ (for the reduced norm } N : D \to \mathbb{Q} \text{ and the main involution } \iota) \text{. Then } s(x, y) = \pm \text{Tr}(xy^*) \text{. In this case, we have } m = 4, \text{ and usually we assume the sign to be } + (\text{we write } D^+ \text{ for } D \text{ if we need to indicate the sign}). \text{ More explicitly, we have an expression } D = \{(a, b) | a, b \in K \} \text{ with } 0 \neq \partial \in \mathbb{Z} \text{ for a quadratic field } K/\mathbb{Q} \text{ with}
\end{align*}$
\[ \langle \psi \rangle = \text{Gal}(K/Q). \] Here \( \delta^2 \) is the discriminant of \( D/Q \). The maximal order \( R \) of \( D \) we fixed is assumed to satisfy \( R \hookrightarrow M_2(O_K) \) by the above embedding. We let \( (\alpha, \beta) \in D^x \times D^x \) act from the right on \( D \) by \( x \mapsto \alpha^{-1}x\beta \); so, \( N(\alpha^{-1}x\beta) = N(\alpha)^{-1}N(\beta)N(x) \). Thus by this action, we have a morphism \( \varrho = \varrho_{Q \times Q} : D^x \times D^x = D^x_{Q \times Q} \to \text{O}_D \) for the orthogonal group \( \text{O}_D \) of \( (D, Q) \). Sometimes, we also use a slightly different action \( x \mapsto \alpha^*x\beta \).

(D\(^\pm_0 \)) Let \( V = D^x_0 := \{x \in D/E | x^2 = \pm x^2 \} \) and \( Q(x) = xx^\sigma = \pm x^2 = \pm N(x) \in Q \) (\( x \in D^x_0 \)). Then \( x(x, y) = x(\pm(x, y)) = \pm \text{Tr}_{D/E}(xy) = \text{Tr}_{D/E}(xy^\sigma) \in Q \). We have \( m = 4 \). Indeed, over \( C \), we can identify \( D_\sigma \otimes C \equiv M_2(C) \oplus M_2(C) \) with \( \sigma \) interchanging the components \( M_2(C) \), and we have \( D_\sigma \otimes C = \{X, x = x^\sigma \in M_2(C) \oplus M_2(C) | X \in M_2(C) \} \) which has dimension 4 over \( C \). We may let \( \alpha \in D^x_E \) act on \( D^x_0 \) by \( x \mapsto \alpha^*x\beta \).

\[ (\alpha^*x\beta)^\sigma = \alpha^\sigma x^\sigma \alpha = \pm \alpha^\sigma x^\alpha \alpha = (\alpha^*x\beta)^\sigma. \]

This action preserves \( V \) and \( Q \) up to scalar \( N(\alpha)N(\alpha)^\sigma \in Q \). If \( N(\alpha) \in Q \), we can modify slightly the action by \( (\alpha^{-1}x\alpha)^\sigma = N(\alpha)^{-1}\alpha^\sigma x^\alpha = \pm N(\alpha)^{-1}\alpha^\sigma x^\alpha = (\alpha^{-1}x\alpha)^\sigma \).

By \( x \mapsto \alpha^{-1}x\alpha \), we have a morphism \( \varrho_E : \{ \alpha \in D^x_E | N(\alpha) \in \mathbb{Q}^x \} \to \text{O}_{D_\sigma} \) of algebraic groups. Regard \( \text{Gal}(K/E) = \langle \psi \rangle \) and \( \text{Gal}(K/E) = \langle \sigma \rangle \cdot \langle \psi \rangle \).

Write \( L \) for the fixed field of \( \sigma \) and \( K = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{d(K)}] \). Then \( L = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{d(K)}] \). Then \( D^x_\sigma = \{ \frac{a}{\sqrt{d_\sigma}} | b \in \sqrt{d_\sigma} \} \) and \( D^x_\sigma = \{ \frac{a}{\sqrt{d_\sigma}} | b \in \sqrt{d_\sigma} \} \). Since \( \sigma \) and \( \iota \) are involutions commuting each other, they act on \( D^x_0 \).

(D\(^\pm_5 \)) Let \( D^x_0 = \{ x \in D^x_0 | \text{Tr}(x) = x + x^* = 0 \} \) and \( Q^x_0(x) = xx^\sigma = \pm N(x) \). We have \( D^x_0 = \sqrt{d^x_0} \subset D^x_0 \). Then \( x(x, y) = \pm \text{Tr}(xy^\sigma) \). In this case, we have \( m = 3 \). We let \( D^x_0 \) act on \( D^x_0 \) by \( x \mapsto \alpha^{-1}x\alpha \). By this action, we have a morphism \( \varrho_0 : D^x \to \text{O}_{D_0} \) of algebraic groups.

(Z\(^\pm \)) Write \( \Delta_- \) for the square-free part of \( \Delta \), and put \( \Delta_+ = 1 \). Here we assume that \( \Delta_- > 0 \) if \( \Delta > 0 \) and \( \Delta_- < 0 \) if \( \Delta < 0 \). Let \( Z^\pm = \{ x \in D^x_0 | x^2 = \pm x^2 \} \) be \( d_\pm = \sqrt{\Delta_-} \) with \( s^\pm(\delta_\pm x, \delta_\pm y) = \text{Tr}(\delta_\pm x \delta_\pm y) = \pm 2\delta_\pm x^2 \). Then \( Z^\pm = \mathbb{Q} \subset D^x_\sigma^{\pm} \) and \( Z^\pm = \mathbb{Q} \sqrt{\Delta_-} \subset D^x_\sigma^{\pm} \). Here \( Z^\pm = D_\sigma \cap Z(D_E) \) for the center \( Z(D_E) \) of \( D_E \). The space \( (Z^+, Q^+) \) is positive definite, and \( (Z^-, Q^-) \) is either positive definite or negative definite according to whether \( E \) is imaginary or real.

We record
\[ \delta = \delta_+ = 1 \quad \text{for} \quad D^x_+ \quad \text{and} \quad \delta = \delta_- = \sqrt{\Delta_-} \quad \text{in} \quad E \quad \text{for} \quad D^x_- . \]

Cases \( D^\pm \) and \( D^\pm_5 \) are not disjoint. Indeed, if we take \( E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q} \), we find \( D_E = D \times D \) with \( \sigma \) interchanging two simple components, and \( D^x_0 = \{ x, x^2 \} | x \in D \} \cong D \) by \( (x, x^2) \mapsto x \). This identification is an identification of quadratic spaces \( D^x_0 \cong D^\pm \). Because of this overlap, in this paper, we deal with \( D^\pm_5, D^\pm_0, \) and \( \mathbb{Z}^\pm \) without losing the case \( D^\pm \).

Here is the list of the signature of \( D_\sigma \). We say \( E \) is real if \( E = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{\Delta}] \) with \( 0 < \Delta \in \mathbb{Z} \) and \( \sqrt{\Delta} = (1, -1) \). Otherwise, we say \( E \) is imaginary.

(RI) If \( E \) is real and \( D \) is definite, then
\[ D^x_5 \otimes \mathbb{R} = \{ (X, \pm X^0) \in M_2(\mathbb{R}) \oplus M_2(\mathbb{R}) | X \in M_2(\mathbb{R}) \} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R}). \]

Thus it has signature \((2, 2)\).

(RD) If \( E \) is real and \( D \) is definite, then
\[ D_\sigma \otimes \mathbb{R} = \{(X, \pm X^0) \in \mathbb{H} \oplus \mathbb{H} | X \in \mathbb{H} \} \cong \mathbb{H} \]
for Hamilton quaternion algebra \( \mathbb{H} \); so, it has signature \((4, 0) \) for \((D^\pm, N) \) or \((0, 4) \) for \((D^\pm_0, -N) \).

(ID) If \( E \) is imaginary and \( D \otimes \mathbb{R} \cong \mathbb{H} \), let \( H := \{ x \in M_2(C) | xJ = Jx^0 \} \). Then by computation, we have \( H = \{ \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -\overline{b} & \overline{a} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \} \cong \mathbb{H} \). Defining \( \sigma_J(x) := Jx^\sigma J^{-1} \), \( \sigma_J \) gives an involution of \( M_2(C) \) such that \( H^0((\sigma_J), M_2(C)) \cong \mathbb{H} \).

Then
\[ D^x_{\sigma_J} = \left\{ \left( \begin{smallmatrix} \sqrt{\overline{a}} & b \\ \sqrt{\overline{b}} & \overline{a} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \bigg| a, b \in \mathbb{R}, b \in \mathbb{C} \right\} \]
and $N\left(\frac{\sqrt[4]{a} \pm b}{\sqrt{t}}\right) = \pm ad \mp b\bar{b}$. Thus $Q^\pm$ has signature $(1, 3)$ on $D^\pm_{\sigma}$.

(II) If $E$ is imaginary and $D_E := D \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$, moving by an inner automorphism of $M_2(\mathbb{C})$, we may assume $D_E = M_2(\mathbb{R}) \subset M_2(\mathbb{C})$. Thus $\left(\frac{a}{c} \ b\right)^\pm =\left(\frac{-c}{a}\right)$ for $\left(\frac{a}{c} \ b\right) \in M_2(\mathbb{C}) = Dc$. When we need to distinguish the action of $\text{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q})$ in the two cases ID and II, we write the action of $\sigma$ as $\sigma_1$ in Case II and $\sigma_f$ in Case ID. Then we find

$$(3.3) \quad D^\pm_{\sigma} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R} = \left\{X = \pm X' | X \in M_2(\mathbb{C})\right\} = \left\{\left(\frac{a}{c} \ b\right)^\pm \left(\sqrt{\frac{\mp tb}{\pm a}}\right) | a, c \in \mathbb{R}\right\}.$$}

Thus the signature is $(3, 1)$ for $(D^+_E, \mp N)$ and $(1, 3)$ for $(D^-_E, \mp N)$.

In Case II, on $D_{\sigma} \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R}$, $g \in (D \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R})^\times \cong \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ with $N(g) \in \mathbb{R}$ acts by $x \mapsto g^{-1}xg$ which preserves $s_\pm$. Thus $\text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ is isomorphic to $\text{SO}(3, 1)$.

Let $A^\pm(V) = A^\pm(V, \mathbb{Q})$ for the set of even or odd elements of the Clifford algebra $A(V)$ of $V$ as defined in [AQF, §23]. Write the graded Clifford algebra as $A^\pm(V) := A^+(V) \oplus A^-(V)$. Put

$$G_V = \{a \in A(V, \mathbb{Q}) | a^{-1}V a = V\}$$

as an algebraic group, and set $G^\pm_V = G_V \cap A^\pm(V)$. By sending $a \in G_V$ to $g_V(a) \in \text{Aut}(V)$ given by $g_V(a)(v) = a^{-1}va$, we have a morphism $g_V : G_V \to \text{O}_V$ by the construction of the Clifford algebra [AQF, (24.1c)]. Then $G^\pm_V = G^+_V \cup G^-_V$ is a subgroup of $G_V$.

In the following statements, let $A$ denote either a field extension of $\mathbb{Q}$ or the (finite or full) adele ring of a number field. We have (cf. [MSS, §8.5.3], [HMI, Proposition 2.65] and [AQF, §24–25])

- If $(V, Q) = (D, N)$ for the reduced norm $N : D \to \mathbb{Q}$, $\chi_D = 1$ and $A^+(D) = D \times D$ [AQF, Theorems 23.8 and 25.4]. The morphism $\vartheta_D$ induces surjections $G^+_D(A) \to \text{O}_D(A)$ and $G^-_D(A) \to \text{SO}_D(A)$ [AQF, Theorem 24.6]. In this case $d(D) = \vartheta^2 = 1$ modulo square.

- If $(V, Q) = (D^+_\sigma, \pm N)$, writing the discriminant of $D$ (resp. $E, K$) as $\vartheta^2$ (resp. $\Delta, d_K$) with $0 < \Delta, \Delta, d_N \in \mathbb{Z}$ (so, $E = \mathbb{Q} \sqrt{\Delta}$), $\chi_{D\sigma} = \left(\frac{\vartheta^2}{\Delta, \vartheta^2}\right)$. Indeed, by the expression of $D_{\sigma}$ as in $(D_{\sigma})$, for the fixed field $L = \mathbb{Q} \sqrt{\Delta d_N}$ in $\text{KE}$ of $\sigma$, $(D^+_\sigma, N) \cong (K, -\Delta d_N K/\mathbb{Q}) \cong (L, \bar{N} L/\mathbb{Q})$ and $(D^+_\sigma, -N) \cong (K, \bar{N} K/\mathbb{Q}) \cong (L, -\Delta N L/\mathbb{Q})$. Thus $d(D_{\sigma}) = \Delta^2 d_N^2 \vartheta^2 = \Delta$ modulo square. Thus $\chi_{D\sigma} = \chi_E$. We also have $A^+(D_{\sigma}) = D_E$ [AQF, Theorem 23.8]. The morphism $\vartheta_{D\sigma}$ induces surjections $G^+_D(A) \to \text{O}_{D\sigma}(A)$ and $G^-_D(A) \to \text{SO}_{D\sigma}(A)$ [AQF, Theorem 24.6], $\text{O}_{D\sigma} = \text{SO}_{D\sigma} \cup \text{SO}_{D\sigma}$, and $G^-_D(A) = \{a \in D_E^\times | N(a) \in \mathbb{Q}\}$ is the even Clifford group of $D_{\sigma}$ [AQF, Theorem 24.6].

- If $(V, Q) = (Z^\pm, \pm N)$, we put $\chi_Z(a b \langle c \rangle) = \epsilon_{\pm 1}\left(\frac{c}{a}\right)$ for $\langle a b \rangle \in \Gamma_0(4)$ (e.g., [S75, Lemma 1.2]). where $\left(\frac{c}{a}\right)$ is the Legendre symbol as in §1.3 and $\epsilon_d = 1$ if $d \equiv 1 \mod 4$ and $\sqrt{-1}$ if $d = 3 \mod 4$. We have $d(Z^\pm) = \pm(\delta_{\pm}^2) = \chi_{Z^\pm}(\Delta_{\pm}) = \left(\frac{\Delta_{\pm}}{\mathbb{Q}}\right)$ [Sh73, Proposition 1.3].

- Let $(V, Q) = (D^+_\sigma, \pm N)$. We have $A^+(D_{\sigma}) = D$ [AQF, Lemma 25.2], and the morphism $\vartheta_0$ induces a surjection $G^+_D(A) \to \text{SO}_{D\sigma}(A)$ [AQF, Theorem 24.6] whose kernel is the center of $G^+_D = D^\times$. We have $d(D^+_\sigma) = d(D_{\sigma})d(Z^\pm)^{-1} = \pm\Delta_{\pm}$ modulo square.

**Remark 3.1.** When $m$ is odd, we find $d(V, zQ) = z^m d(V, Q)$ for $z \in Q^\times$. Since $G_{O_V}$, $O_V$, $SO_V$ and $G^+(V)$ are equal for all scalar multiple of $Q$, for the statement concerning these groups, if $m = \dim V$ is odd, we may assume that $d(V) = 1$ modulo square.

### 3.2. Choices of $D$ for a fixed $D_E$.

The Shimura variety of $D^\times_E$ gives rise to a subvariety of the Shimura variety or the automorphic manifold of $D^\times_E := \text{Res}_{E/\mathbb{Q}} D^\times_E$. If we fix (the isomorphism class of) $D_E$, there are many choices of $D$ which gives rise to the given $D_E$. They produce different cycles over which we compute the period. We fix $D_E$ and study quaternion sub-algebras of $D_E$.

We discuss slightly more generally for a while. Let $D$ be a quaternion algebra over a field $E_0$ of characteristic 0 and for a semi-simple quadratic extension $E/E_0$, we put $D_E = D \otimes_{E_0} E$. Write $\sigma$ for the generator of $\text{Aut}(E/E_0)$ and let it act on $D_E$ through the factor $E$. Thus if $E = E_0 \times E_+$, $\sigma(x, y) = (y, x)$ for $x, y \in E_+$. Define $D^\pm_{\sigma} = \{x \in D_E | x^\sigma = \pm x\}$.

If we do not need to refer to the sign defining $D^\pm_{\sigma}$, we just write $D_{\sigma}$ for $D^\pm_{\sigma}$. Pick $\alpha \in D_{\sigma} \cap D^\times_E$. Consider $x^\alpha = \alpha x^\alpha \alpha^{-1}$. Then $(x^\alpha)^\sigma = (\alpha^\sigma x^\sigma)^\alpha \alpha^{-1} = \alpha(\alpha^\sigma x^\alpha \alpha^{-1})^{-1} = x$. Thus we get a new action of $\text{Gal}(E/E_0)$ on $D_E$. Then $D_{\alpha} := H^0(E/E_0, D_E)$ under this new action is a
quaternion algebra over \( \mathbb{Q} \), and plainly \( D_E = D_\alpha \otimes_{E_+} E \). Often \( D_\alpha \neq D \). Thus the Shimura variety \( Sh \) associated to \( D_E^\mathbb{R} \) has the Shimura subvariety \( Sh_\alpha \) associated to \( D_\alpha^\mathbb{R} \). If \( x \in D_\alpha \), then \( x^{\sigma_\alpha} = \alpha x^{\sigma_\alpha} \). Thus we have the following expression

\[
D_\alpha := \{ x \in D_E | x^{\sigma_\alpha} = \alpha x^{\sigma_\alpha} \} \quad \text{and} \quad D_\alpha^\mathbb{R} := \{ x \in D_E^\mathbb{R} | x^{\sigma_\alpha} = N(x) \alpha \}.
\]

**Lemma 3.2.** Let the notion be as above.

1. If \( B \) is a central-simple \( E_+ \)-subalgebra of \( D_E \) of dimension 4, then there exists \( \alpha \in D_\sigma \) such that \( B = D_\alpha \).
2. We have \( \alpha = \xi \beta \xi_\alpha \) for \( \beta \in D_\alpha \cap D_E^\mathbb{R} \) and \( \xi \in D_E^\mathbb{R} \) if and only if \( D_\alpha \cong D_\beta \) as a quaternion algebra over \( E_+ \), and in this case, we have \( D_\alpha = \xi D_\beta \xi^{-1} \) inside \( D_E \).
3. We have \( D_\beta = D_\alpha \) if and only if \( \alpha \in E_+^\times \cap D_\sigma \).

**Proof.** Pick a quaternion \( E_+ \)-subalgebra \( B \subset D_E \). Then we have an action of \( \sigma \in \text{Gal}(E/E_+) \) on \( D_E \) such that \( H^3(E/E_+, D_E) = B \). Identify \( D_E = B \otimes E_+ E \) and write the Galois action of this expression as \( \sigma \); i.e., we have \((b \otimes e)^{\sigma_\alpha} = b \otimes e^{\sigma_\alpha} \) for \( b \in B \) and \( e \in E \). Then \( x \mapsto (x^{\sigma_\alpha})^{\sigma_\alpha} \) is an \( E \)-linear automorphism of \( D_E \), which is inner. Thus there exists \( \alpha \in D_E^\mathbb{R} \) such that \( x^{\sigma_\alpha} = \alpha x^{\sigma_\alpha} \) for all \( x \in D_E^\mathbb{R} \). Since \((x^{\sigma_\alpha})^{\sigma_\alpha} = x \), we find \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha \) is in the center of \( D_E \) and hence \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha \in E_+^\times \).

Therefore \((\alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha) = (\alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha) \), and dividing by the right, we conclude \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha \) commutes with \( \alpha \). Then \((\alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha) = \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha = \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha \). This shows \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \alpha \in E_+ \). Thus \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} = \alpha \) for \( z \in E_+^\times \) and hence \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} = \alpha z = \alpha z \). Therefore \( \alpha \) in the \( E_+ \)-vector space \( D_E \) is an eigenvector of the \( E_+ \)-linear map \( \sigma_\alpha \) with eigenvalue \( z \). Since \( \sigma_\alpha \) has order 2, we have \( z = \pm 1 \) and \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} = \pm \alpha \).

Since \( E = E_+ \sqrt{\Delta} \) for \( \Delta \in E_+^{	imes} \), if the sign of \( z \) does not match with the sign of \( D_E^+ \), for \( \sqrt{\Delta} \in E_+^\times \) with \( \sqrt{\Delta} \) we have \( \sqrt{\Delta} \alpha \) has matching parity. Replacing \( \alpha \) by \( \sqrt{\Delta} \alpha \), we may assume that \( \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} = \pm \alpha \), and we have \( B = D_\alpha \). In this way, every quaternion \( E_+ \)-subalgebra of \( D_E \) appears as \( D_\alpha \). This proves (1).

We now prove (2). We may assume that \( \beta \in D_\sigma \cap E_+ \). Plainly \( D_\beta = D_\alpha \). Suppose \( \alpha = \xi \beta \xi_\alpha \) for \( \xi \in D_\alpha^\mathbb{R} \) for \( \xi \neq \beta \in E_+ \cap D_\sigma \). Then

\[
\gamma \in D_\alpha \leftrightarrow \gamma_\alpha = \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha} \leftrightarrow \gamma \xi \beta \xi_\alpha = \xi \beta \xi_\alpha \gamma \xi^{-\sigma} \leftrightarrow \xi^{-1} \gamma \beta = \beta \xi^{\sigma_\alpha} \gamma \xi^{-\sigma} \leftrightarrow \xi^{-1} \gamma \beta = \beta (\xi^{-1} \gamma \xi) \alpha^{\sigma_\alpha}.
\]

This shows \( D_\alpha = \xi D_\beta \xi^{-1} \).

To see the converse, suppose we have an isomorphism \( i : D \cong B = D_\alpha \) of \( E_+ \)-algebras. Then we can identify \( D_E = B \otimes E_+ E \); so, \( i \) is induced by \( x \mapsto \xi x \xi^{-1} \) for \( \xi \in D_E \).

The assertion (3) just follows from the definition.

We state Lemma 3.2 (2) in a different way, whose proof we leave to the reader.

**Corollary 3.3.** Let \( \sigma_\alpha(x) = \alpha x^{\sigma_\alpha} \) and \( D_{\sigma_\alpha}^\pm = \{ v \in D_E | v^{\sigma_\alpha} = \pm v \} \). The following three conditions are equivalent:

- We have \( \alpha = \xi \beta \xi_\alpha \) for \( \beta \in D_\sigma \cap D_E^\mathbb{R} \) and \( \xi \in D_E^\mathbb{R} \);
- \( D_{\sigma_\alpha}^\pm \cong D_{\sigma_\alpha}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} \) as a quadratic space over \( E_+ \), and in this case, we have \( D_{\sigma_\alpha}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} = \xi D_{\sigma_\alpha}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} \); and
- \( D_{\sigma_\alpha}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} \cong D_{\beta,0}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} \) as a quadratic space over \( E_+ \); for \( D_{\alpha,0}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} = \{ v \in D_{\sigma_\alpha}^{\pm \mathbb{R}} | v + v^\prime = 0 \} \).

Here is an adelic version. We assume that \( E_+ \) is a finite extension of \( \mathbb{Q} \), i.e., a number field. Let \( \alpha \in D_E^\mathbb{R} \) with \( N(\alpha) \neq 0 \). An \( E_+ \)-subalgebra \( B_{E_+} \) of \( D_E \), of rank 4 is called an adelic quaternion algebra over \( E_+ \) if its projection to \( D_E \) is a central simple quaternion algebra over \( E_+ \) for all places \( v \) of \( E_+ \) and is isomorphic to \( M_2(E_+) \) for almost all \( v \). Then define \( D_\alpha := \{ x \in D_{E_+} | xa = ax^{\sigma_\alpha} \} \).

**Lemma 3.4.**

1. If \( B_{E_+} \) is an adelic quaternion \( E_+ \)-subalgebra of \( D_{E_+} \), then there exists \( a \in D_{E_+} \) such that \( B_{E_+} = D_\alpha \).
2. We have \( a = b x^{\sigma_\alpha} \) for \( \neq b \in D_\sigma \) and \( x \in D_{E_+} \) if and only if \( D_\alpha \cong D_b \) as an adelic quaternion algebra over \( E_+ \), and in this case, we have \( D_\alpha = x D_b x^{-1} \).
3. We have \( D_\alpha = D_{E_+} \) if and only if \( a \in E_+ \cap D_\sigma \).

The proof follows from Lemma 3.2 place by place. We leave it to the reader.

Assume \( E_+ = \mathbb{Q} \). Let \( V = D_{\alpha,0}^\pm \) with quadratic form \( \pm N(v) = v v^{\sigma_\alpha} = \pm v v^\prime \). Let

\[
O_\alpha = O_{D_{\alpha,0}^\pm} \quad \text{and} \quad SO_\alpha = SO_{D_{\alpha,0}^\pm} \quad \text{which are independent of the sign}.
\]
If $z \in \mathbb{Q}$ is a scalar in $O_{\alpha}$, then $z^2 = 1$ by $\pm z^2 N(v) = \pm N(zv) = \pm N(v)$ for all $v \in V$. Thus the center $Z(O_{\alpha})(A) = \mu_2(A)$. Since $V$ has dimension 3, $\det(z) = z^3$. Thus $SO_\alpha(A) \cap Z(O_{\alpha}) = \{1\}$.

Taking the associated symmetric matrix $S$ for the symmetric form $s^+(x, y)$ on $V$, we find for $\alpha \in O_{\alpha}$, $\alpha \circ S \circ \alpha = S$; so, $\det(\alpha)^2 = 1$. Thus we find $O_{\alpha}/SO_\alpha$ is embedded into $\mu_2$ by $\det$. Since $-1 \in Z(O_{\alpha})$ has determinant $-1$, we find $O_{\alpha} \cong \mu_2 \times SO_\alpha$.

We identify $SO_{D_\alpha}$ as a quotient of $G^+_\alpha$ by $\overset{\circ}{g}_{D_\alpha}$. If $D_E \otimes \mathbb{R} \cong M_2(E_\mathbb{R})$, we identify the two $E_\mathbb{R}$-algebras and let $G^+_\alpha(R)$ act on $\mathcal{H}^2$ by $(z, w) \mapsto ((a + \overline{b})z + (\overline{a} + b)w)/\overline{c + d}$. The stabilizer of $(\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}) \in \mathcal{H}^2$ gives rise to a maximal compact subgroup $C_\alpha(SO_{D_\alpha}(\mathbb{R}))$. If $D_E$ is definite, we put $C_{\infty}(SO_{D_\alpha}(\mathbb{R})) = SO_{D_\alpha}(\mathbb{R})$. For an open compact subgroup $U$ of $SO_\alpha(A(\infty))$, we define

\begin{equation}
\text{Sh}_\alpha = \text{Sh}_{\alpha, U} := \text{SO}_\alpha(\mathbb{Q})/\text{SO}(\mathbb{A}) \times \text{UC}_\alpha = \text{SO}_\alpha(\mathbb{Q})/\text{SO}(\mathbb{A}) \times \text{UC}_\alpha
\end{equation}

with the maximal compact subgroup $C_\alpha = \text{SO}_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \cap C_{\infty}(SO_{D_\alpha}(\mathbb{R}))$. Since $\varrho_0 = \varrho_{D_\alpha, \alpha} : D_\alpha \to SO_\alpha$ has kernel $G_m/\mathbb{Q}$ and is surjective over $\mathbb{Q}$, $\mathbb{A}$ and $\mathbb{Q}_v$ for all places $v$ of $\mathbb{Q}$, we find

\begin{equation}
\text{Sh}_\alpha \cong D_\alpha^\times / g_0^{-1}(U) A_{\infty} \varrho_0^{-1}(C_\alpha)
\end{equation}

which is a quaternionic Shimura variety (strictly speaking, is the Shimura variety of the quaternionic group $D_\alpha^\times$ modulo the center).

4. Period for indefinite $D_\alpha$ with $E$ real.

For any $(V, Q)$ as in §3.1, recall $V_A = V \otimes \mathbb{A}$: e.g., $D^+_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}} = D^+_{\mathbb{R}} \otimes \mathbb{A}$ and $D_{E_\mathbb{R}} = D \otimes \mathbb{R} E_\mathbb{R} = D_E \otimes \mathbb{R}$. We apply the principle (S) and (R) of Waldspurger described in the introduction to the splitting $D_E^+ = Z^+ \oplus D_0^+$ and compute the period integral $\int_{\text{Sh}_\alpha} \vartheta^*(F)(h) d\mu_h$ for the theta lift $\vartheta^*(F)(h) = \int_{X(M)} \Phi(g) \vartheta(\phi)(g, h) dg$ ($g \in MP(\mathbb{A}), h \in D_{E_\mathbb{R}}^0$) for a well-chosen Siegel-Weil theta series $\vartheta(\phi)(g, h)$. Depending on the choice of $D_\alpha$, $E$, and the level $\vartheta^*(F)$ could vanish. In this paper, we hereafter assume, for our choice of $\phi$ and the level $M$ determined by $\phi$,

\begin{equation}
(\Phi 0) \quad MP(\mathbb{A}) \ni g \mapsto \int_{D_\alpha^\times \setminus D_{\mathbb{R}}^+ / k} \vartheta^*(F)(g, h) d\mu_h \neq 0 \text{ as a function of } g.
\end{equation}

If $\phi(\infty) = \phi_2 \otimes \phi_0$ with $\phi_0 \in S(V(\infty))$ for $V = Z, D_0$ and $\phi_\infty = \sum_j \phi^Z_{k - j} \otimes \phi^{D_0}_j$ ($j \in \mathbb{Z} \cap [0, k]$) for the weight $k$ of $F$ with $\phi^Z_j \in \mathcal{S}(V(\mathbb{R}))$, we set $\Phi_j(g) := r(g)(\phi_0 \otimes \phi^{D_0}_j)(0)$ for $g \in MP(\mathbb{A})$ and $f_j := \theta(\phi_2 \otimes \phi^Z_{k - j})$. Then $\{f_j, \Phi_j\}_j$ satisfies (Φ0) under (Φ0). Indeed, by Siegel-Weil formula, for the Shimura subvariety $S$ of $D_\alpha^\times$ in the automorphic manifold of $D_{\mathbb{R}}^+$, we have $mE(\Phi_j) = \int_S \vartheta(\phi_0 \otimes \phi^D_0)(g, h) d\mu_h$ ($h \in D_{\mathbb{R}}^+$) for the mass $m \in \mathbb{C}_{\infty}$ in [AQF, §37.1], and $mE(\Phi(g)) = \int_{D_{\mathbb{R}}^+} \Phi(g) \vartheta(\phi)(g, h) d\mu_h$ does not vanish as a function of $g$ as otherwise $\int_S \vartheta^*(F)(g, h) d\mu_h$ in (Φ0) vanishes as a function of $g$.

In this section, we assume $D_\alpha \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$ and $E_\mathbb{R} = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}$ including the case $E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}$. Under this setting, We write $S_\alpha(\Gamma, \varphi) = S_{\mathbb{R}}^1(\Gamma, \varphi)$ for the space of holomorphic elliptic cusp forms of weight $k$ on $\Gamma \subset SL_2(\mathbb{Z})$ with character $\varphi$. We write $S_\infty(\Gamma, \varphi)$ for the anti-holomorphic version of $S_\alpha(\Gamma, \varphi)$.

4.1. Explicit form of Siegel–Weil theta series. Let $\phi$ be a Schwartz-Bruhat function on $D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}}$. As in [H06a, (2.17)], define a Schwartz function $\Psi_k$ on $D_{\mathbb{A}}$ for $(\tau, z, w) \in \mathcal{H} \times (\mathbb{C} - \mathbb{R})^2$ and $0 \leq k \leq \mathbb{Z}$,

\begin{equation}
\Psi_k(\tau; z, w)(v) = \frac{\operatorname{Im}(\tau)}{(z - \overline{z})(w - \overline{w})^k} e(\pm N(v)\tau + \overline{\tau}) \frac{\operatorname{Im}(\tau)}{(z - \overline{z})(w - \overline{w})^k} \left[\frac{\operatorname{Im}(\tau)}{(z - \overline{z})(w - \overline{w})^k} \right]^{\frac{1}{2}} [\operatorname{Im}(z) \operatorname{Im}(w)]^{\frac{1}{2}} [\sqrt{v, z, w}^2],
\end{equation}

where for $v = \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ b \\ c \\ d \end{array} \right)$,

\begin{equation}
[v; z, w] = -\operatorname{Tr}_{D_E/E}(v' p(z, w)) = -w(1) Jv' (\overline{1}) = (z, 1) J v' (\overline{1}) = wcz - aw + dz - b
\end{equation}

for $p(z, w) := (t(z, 1)(w, 1), J) = (t^{-1} \overline{w}, \overline{w})$ with $J = \left( \begin{array}{cc} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{array} \right)$. In [H06a, (2.17)], we have $\operatorname{Im}(z) \operatorname{Im}(w)$ in place of $|\operatorname{Im}(z) \operatorname{Im}(w)|$. This is because in [H06a], we have chosen the connected component of the hermitian symmetric domain $\mathcal{H}^2$ for the orthogonal group given by $\operatorname{Im}(z) > 0$. If we insert $\overline{z}$ or $\overline{w}$ in place of $z$ or $w$, we need to work the lower half plane; so, we need to replace $\operatorname{Im}(z) \operatorname{Im}(w)$ by $|\operatorname{Im}(z) \operatorname{Im}(w)|$. We choose a Bruhat function $\phi(\infty) : D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}}^\infty \to \mathbb{C}$ and put

\begin{equation}
\phi = \phi_k = \phi(\infty) \otimes \Psi_k
\end{equation}

and consider Siegel’s theta series $\theta(\phi_k) = \theta(\phi_k)(\tau; z, w) = \sum_{v \in D_\alpha} \phi(v)$.
Write $O(A) := O_{D_\sigma}(A)$ and $SO(A) = \{g \in GO(A) | \det(g) = 1\}$ as an algebraic group over $\mathbb{Q}$. Here $\det$ is taken regarding $g$ as an automorphism: $v \mapsto g^{-1}vg^\sigma$ of $D_\sigma$. Since

$$G^+(\mathbb{Q}) = \{\alpha \in D_E^+ | N(\alpha) \in \mathbb{Q}\}$$

is the even Clifford group of $D_\sigma$ [AQF, Theorem 24.6], we have $SO(A) = G^+(A)/Z_{G^+}(A)$ for the center $Z_{G^+}$ of $G^+$. The action of $g \in D_E^+$ on $D_\sigma$ as an element of $O$ (and $GO$) is given by $v \mapsto g^{-1}vg^\sigma$. Since $x \mapsto x^\sigma$ preserves $N(x)$ and $O(A) = SO(A) \cup iSO(A) = SO(A) \cup \sigma SO(A)$.

We have for $g \in GO(\mathbb{R})$

\[
\frac{[g^\sigma v g^\tau;z,w]}{\Im(g(z)) \Im(g^\sigma(w))} = \frac{N(g^\sigma)^{-1}j(g,z)j(g^\sigma, w)}{\Im(z) \Im(w)},
\]

\[
\frac{[g^\sigma v g^\tau;z,\overline{w}]}{\Im(z) \Im(w)} = \frac{N(g^\sigma) \frac{|[v;g(z),g^\sigma(w)|^2]}{\Im(g(z)) \Im(g^\sigma(w))},}
\]

where $j((a \ b \ c \ d), (\tau)) = ct + d$. These formulas tell us, if $\gamma \in D_E^+$ with $N(\gamma) = 1$ and $\phi(\infty) \circ \gamma = \phi(\infty)$,

\[
(4.4) \quad \theta(\phi_\gamma)(z, \gamma(w)) = \theta(\phi_\gamma)(z, w)j(\gamma, z)k(j(\gamma, \overline{w})^k)j(\gamma, \overline{w})^k.
\]

Over $\mathbb{R}$, if $E$ is real, $(D_\sigma, r) \cong (D_\sigma, s)$; so, $O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cong O_D(\mathbb{R})$ and $SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cong SO_D(\mathbb{R})$.

$SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cong \{(x, y) \in (\text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R}))/\text{SO}_+(\mathbb{R}) \partial x/\partial y = 1\}$

\[
\cong O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cong SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cup SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}),
\]

regarding $\sigma \in \text{Aut}(D_{\sigma/Q})$ as an element of $O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q})$ [AQF, §25.3]. Here $\text{SO}_+(\mathbb{R})$ is the diagonal image of $\mathbb{R}$ in $\text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R})$. The special orthogonal group $SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R})$ has two connected components

$SO_{D_\sigma}^+(\mathbb{R}) = \{(x, y) \in SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) | \det(x) > 0\}$, $SO_{D_\sigma}^-(\mathbb{R}) = \{(x, y) \in SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) | \det(x) < 0\}$ and

\[
SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \cong \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
\]

4.2. Differential form coming from theta series. We write the Shimura subvariety associated to $D_\alpha$ as $Sh_\alpha$ hereafter. We just write $Sh = Sh_\delta$ for $\delta$ as in (3.1); so, $D_\delta = D$ (since $\delta \in D_\sigma \cap E^\times$). See (3.13) for a precise definition of $Sh_\alpha$. Since we want to compute the integral of the theta lift over the Shimura subvariety $Sh$, we describe the differential form associated to the theta series of degree $2 = \dim_{\mathbb{R}} Sh$.

Suppose that $\theta(\phi)$ is automorphic on $\Gamma_\tau \subset \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Z})$. Let $L_E(n, A)$ be the space of homogeneous polynomials for a pair $(X, Y)$ and $(X', Y')$ of variables of degree $n$ with coefficients in an E-algebra $A$. Suppose that $D_E \otimes A \cong M_2(A) \times M_2(A)$ for two projections inducing identity and $\sigma$. Let $D_E$ acts on $P((X, Y; X', Y')) \in L_E(n; A)$ by $\gamma P((X, Y; X', Y')) = P((X, Y)\gamma, (X', Y')\gamma^\sigma)$. Then

\[
(4.7) \quad \Theta(z, w) = \Theta(\tau; z, w) := \theta(\phi_\gamma)(\tau; z, w)(X - zY)^k(2X' - \overline{w}Y')^{\overline{w}}dz \wedge d\overline{w}
\]

is a $C^\infty$-differential form with values in $L_E(k - 2; \mathbb{C})$. Then we have

\[
\gamma^* \Theta = \Theta(\gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(w)) = \theta(\gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(w))(X - zY)^k(2X' - \overline{w}Y')^{\overline{w}}dz \wedge d\overline{w} = \gamma(\Theta(z))
\]

and $\gamma \cdot \Theta$ is the action of $\gamma$ on the value in $L_E(k - 2; \mathbb{C})$. We write $\Theta(\tau; z, z)$.

Recall the maximal order $R \subset D$ we fixed in (D) in §1.1, we consider $R \otimes A$-module $L(n, A) = L_Q(n; A)$ made of homogeneous polynomials of degree $n$ in $(S, T)$ with coefficients in $A$. We assume that $R \otimes A \hookrightarrow M_2(A)$ and $\gamma \in R$ acts on $P(S, T) \hookrightarrow P((S, T)\gamma^\sigma).

The $D^\times$-module $L_E(n; A)|_{D^\times}$ has the following decomposition into irreducible factors

\[
L_E(n; A)|_{D^\times} \cong L_Q(n; A) \otimes L_Q(n; A) \cong \bigoplus_{j=0}^n L_Q(2n - 2j; A).
\]

As in [H94, page 498], write $\pi : L_E(n; A) = L_E(n, 0; A) \rightarrow A = L(0, n; A)$ for the $\text{SL}(2)$-equivariant projection given by

\[
(4.8) \quad \pi(P((X, Y; X', Y'))) = n!^{-2} \nabla^n P \text{ for } \nabla = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X \partial Y} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y \partial X}.
\]
Here \( L(n; A) = L(n, 0; A) \) under the notation of [H99]. By [H99, page 141], we have
\[
(4.9) \quad n!^{-2} \varphi^n X^{-i} Y^i X^{n-j} Y^j = \begin{cases} \binom{-i}{i} & \text{if } n = i + j, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}
\]
Thus we get from \((X - zY)^n(X' - \overline{z}Y')^n = \sum_{i,j=0}^n \binom{n}{i,j} (-1)^{i+j} z^i \overline{z}^j X^{-i} Y^i X'^{-j} Y'^j, \)
\[
(4.10) \quad n!^{-2} \varphi^n (X - zY)^n(X' - \overline{z}Y')^n = \sum_{j=0}^n \binom{n}{j} (-1)^j z^{n-j} = (z - \overline{z})^n.
\]
Let \( n = k - 2 \) and write \( S^k_2(\Gamma, \chi_D) \) for the space of cusp forms of weight \( k \) holomorphic in Case + and anti-holomorphic in Case −, where we say Case ± when we deal with \( D_0^\pm \). Applying \( n!^{-2} \varphi^n \) to \( \gamma^* \Theta = \gamma \cdot \Theta(z) \), we get \( n!^{-2} \varphi^n \Theta(z) = \det(\gamma)^n n!^{-2} \varphi^n \Theta(z) = n!^{-2} \varphi^n \Theta(z) \).

**Remark 4.1.** Since \( H^2 \) with non-constant coefficients vanishes over the Shimura subvariety we study, it appears not necessary to make explicit the projection given by a power of the differential operator \( \varphi \) to the constant sheaf. However for computational purposes, this maneuver is indispensable to reach the final explicit period formula as the operator kills very complicated redundant factors. Thus we will see many such operators in this paper. This point is already clear from the automorphic proof of the exact rational factorization formula for Deligne periods of GL(2)-automorphic forms done in [H94].

**4.3. Factoring the theta series.** Recall \( E = \mathbb{Q}[\sqrt{\Delta}] \) with \( 0 < \Delta = -N(\sqrt{\Delta}) \in \mathbb{Z} \). Plainly \( Z^\perp = D_0 \) and \( D_0^\perp = Z \) under \( s(x, y) = \text{Tr}(xy^t) \), writing \( Z = Z^\pm \). We split the quadratic space
\[
(4.11) \quad (D^\pm_0, \pm N) = (Z^\pm, \pm N|Z^\pm) \oplus (D_0^\pm, \pm N|D_0).
\]
Then \( D_0 = D_0^\perp \) is 3-dimensional of signature \((1, 2)\), and \( Z^\pm \) has signature \((1, 0)\). An element \( \alpha \in D^\times \) acts on \( D_0 \) by \( x \mapsto \alpha^{-1} x \alpha \) and on \( Z \) by the identity action. This action is compatible with the action of \( D^\times_0 \) on \( D_0 \) by \((D_0^\times) \) in §1.1. We have an embedding \( O_{Z} \times O_{D_0} \) into \( O = O_{D_0} \).

We apply the principles \((S)\) and \((R)\) to \( V = D_0, V_0 = D_0 \) and \( V_0^\perp = Z \). Take a Schwartz–Bruhat functions \( \phi_Z \in S(Z^\infty) \) and \( \phi_0 \in S(D_0^\infty) \). For \( z \in Z^\infty \) and \( r \in D_0^\infty \), we assume
\[
(4.12) \quad \text{the tensor decomposition } \phi^{(\infty)}(z \oplus r) = (\phi_Z \otimes \phi_0)(z \oplus r) := \phi_Z(z)\phi_0(r)
\]
of the Bruhat function in order to factor the theta series \( \theta(\phi) \).

Next we study the decomposition of the infinite part with respect to the decomposition \( D_0 = Z \oplus D_0 \). Thus we need to decompose the spherical polynomial \( [\alpha; z, \overline{z}] \). Pick \( z \in Z \) and \( r \in D_0 \). Since \( s = s_2 \oplus s_0 \) for the restriction \( s_2 \) and \( s_0 \) to \( Z \) and \( D_0 \), the signature of \( s_0 \) depends on the sign of \( D_0^\perp \). So we write \( s_\pm \) to indicate the sign of \( s_2 \). Let \( P^\pm \) be a positive majorant of \( s^\pm(x, y) \). When \( P^\pm \) is compatible with the decomposition \((4.11)\), we write \( P^\pm = P^\pm_0 \oplus P^\pm_{\infty} \) accordingly.

Recall \( p(z, \overline{w}) = (\frac{1}{i} - \frac{w}{\overline{w}}) \). Then \( s^\pm(p(z, \overline{w}), p(z, \overline{w})) = \pm 2 \det p(z, \overline{w}) = 0 \). Similarly,
\[
s^\pm(p(z, \overline{w}), p(z, \overline{w})) = \pm \text{Tr}((\frac{1}{i} - \frac{w}{\overline{w}})(\frac{1}{w} - \frac{\overline{w}}{w})) = \pm (\overline{w} - w)(z - \overline{z}) \in \mathbb{R}_\pm.
\]
Let \( W \) be the subspace of \( V_0 \) generated by \( \text{Re}(p(z, \overline{w})) \) and \( \text{Im}(p(z, \overline{w})) \). Then \( s_\perp > 0 \) on \( W \) and \( s^- < 0 \) on \( W \). Decomposing \( V_0 = W \oplus W'^\perp \), we have \( s_\perp < 0 \) on \( W'^\perp \) and \( s^- > 0 \) on \( W'^\perp \). This means \( P^\pm(x, y) = \pm s^\pm(xw, yw') \pm s^\pm(xw_\perp, yw'\perp) \) for the orthogonal projection \( ?_X \) of \( ? \) to \( X = W, W'^\perp \). Then the infinity part the Schwartz function is given by
\[
\Phi(\nu) = Q(\nu) e^{\frac{1}{2}(s^\pm[v] \xi + P^\pm[v] \eta \mu)}.
\]
We compute \( P^\pm[v] \). We start with
\[
P^\pm[v] = \pm s^\pm(cw, c\overline{w}) \pm s^\pm(xw_\perp, yw'^\perp) \pm s^\pm(vw, vw) \pm s^\pm(vw_\perp, vw'^\perp) = \pm 2s^\pm(vw, vw).
\]
Write \( v = cp(z, \overline{w}) + \overline{cp}(\overline{z}, w) + x \) with \( x \in W'^\perp \) and \( c \in \mathbb{C} \). Then
\[
P^\pm[v] \pm s^\pm[v] = \pm 2s^\pm(cp(z, \overline{w}) + \overline{cp}(\overline{z}, w), cp(z, \overline{w}) + \overline{cp}(\overline{z}, w)) = \pm 4|c|^2(s^\pm(p(z, \overline{w}), p(z, \overline{w})))
\]
\[
= 4|c|^2(\overline{w} - w)(z - \overline{z}) \geq 0.
\]
Since \( s^\pm(v, p(z, \overline{w})) = \overline{s^\pm(p(z, w), p(z, \overline{w}))) = \pm \overline{s((w - w)(z - \overline{z})), \text{ writing } [v; z, w] := s^\pm(v, p(z, w)), \text{ we have } \overline{s} = \frac{1}{(w - w)(z - \overline{z})}. \text{ Combining all these, we get } \)

\[
P^\pm[v] = \mp s^\pm[v] + \frac{||[v; z, \overline{w}]||^2}{|\text{Im}(w)| \text{Im}(z)|}.
\]

Thus \( \mp P^\pm[v] = -N(v) + |2 \text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)|^{-1} ||[v; z, w]|^2 \) as in [H06a, (2.2)]. Since \( Q(v) \) is a polynomial, we can write it as \( Q(v) = \sum J Q^2_j(y) Q^j_x(x) \) for \( v = \pm \mp \) with \( z \in Z \) and \( w \in W_0 \).

Recall that Case \( \pm \) means that we deal with \( D_{\sigma}^\pm \). Write \( \tau^\pm := \begin{cases} \tau & \text{in Case +}, \\
-\tau & \text{in Case -}. \end{cases} \text{ Recall also } \)

\[
\Psi_k(\tau; z, w)(v) = \text{Im}(\tau) \frac{[v; z, w]^k}{(z - \overline{\tau})^k(w - \overline{w})^k} e(N(v)\tau^\pm + i \frac{\text{Im}(\tau)}{2|\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)|} ||[v; z, \overline{w}]||^2).
\]

Thus

\[
\Psi_k(\tau; z, w)(v) = \text{Im}(\tau) \frac{[v; z, w]^k}{(z - \overline{\tau})^k(w - \overline{w})^k} e(N(v)\tau^\pm + i \frac{\text{Im}(\tau)}{2|\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)|} ||[v; z, \overline{w}]||^2).
\]

for \( \gamma \in D^\times \) with \( \gamma(\gamma) = 1 \) and \( \gamma \) has positive weight \( (k, k) \) in \( z, \overline{w}, \gamma \) and \( \theta(\phi_k) \) has automorphic factor \( \gamma(\gamma, \overline{\tau}) \) in Case + and \( j(\gamma, \overline{\tau}) \) in Case - by [HMI, Theorem 2.65] as \( D_{\sigma}^\pm \) has signature \( (2, 2) \).

We assume that \( \Gamma_\tau = \Gamma_0(M) \) for an integer \( M > 0 \). Define for \( \alpha \in D_{\sigma}^\pm \)

\[
D_{\sigma, 0} = \{ x \in D_{\sigma} \mid \text{Tr}_{D_{\sigma}/E}(x) = 0 \},
\]

\[
\overline{\Gamma}_\alpha := \{ x \in \text{O}_\alpha(\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{R})) : \phi(\alpha, x) = \phi(\alpha) \} \text{ for all } v \in D_{0, (\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{R}))},
\]

\[
\text{Sh}_\alpha = \text{Sh}_{\alpha, \phi} = \text{O}_\alpha(\mathbb{Q}) \text{O}_\alpha(\mathbb{A})/\overline{\Gamma}_\alpha, C_\alpha,
\]

where \( C_\alpha \) is a maximal compact subgroup of \( \text{O}_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( \varphi : D_{\sigma, 0} \rightarrow \text{SO}_{\alpha} = \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma, 0}} \) is the projection from the Clifford group \( D_{\sigma}^\pm \) to the orthogonal group \( \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma, 0}} \) described in §3.1. When \( D_{\sigma} \) is definite, we have \( \varphi : D_{\sigma, 0}/\mathbb{R}^\times \cong \varphi(\text{C}_\alpha) = \text{SO}_{\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \) with \( \text{C}_\alpha = \text{O}_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \cup \text{SO}_{\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \). If \( D_{\sigma} \) is indefinite, identifying \( D_{\sigma, 0}/\overline{\mathbb{R}}^{\pm} \), \( \text{C}_\alpha \) is the stabilizer of \( \sqrt{-1} \in \mathbb{F} \) (though this depends on the identification \( D_{\sigma, 0}/\overline{\mathbb{R}}^{\pm} \)) but the isomorphism class of \( \text{Sh}_{\alpha} \) is well defined independent of the choice. We assume that

\[
\phi(\alpha) = \prod \phi_l \text{ for a local Bruhat function } \phi_l \in \text{S}(D_{\sigma, 0}), \text{ with } \phi_0(v) = \phi_1(v) \text{ for all } l.
\]

Choose \( \phi \) so that \( \theta(\phi) \) has Neben character \( \varphi^{-1} \chi_{D_{\sigma}} \). Recall \( \text{Sh} = \text{Sh}_\delta \) for \( \delta \) in (3.1). Note here \( D_{\sigma} = D. \) Consider the integral for \( F \in S_k^\pm(\Gamma, \varphi(\alpha)_{D_k^\pm}) \):

\[
P_k(F) := \int_{\overline{\text{Sh}}} \int_{\overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha} n!^{-2} \nabla^N \Theta(\tau; z) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta \text{ (n = k - 2)}
\]

\[
= \frac{1}{|\text{Im}(w)| \text{Im}(z)|} \int_{\overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha} \theta(\phi_k)(\tau; z, w) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta)
\]

\[
= -\frac{\sqrt{-1}}{2} \int_{\overline{\text{Sh}}} \left( \int_{\overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha \setminus \overline{\Gamma}_\alpha} \theta(\phi_k)(\tau; z, w) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta \right) (z - \overline{\tau})^k y^{-2} dxdy.
\]

Since \( s(x) = \pm N(x) \) on \( D_{\sigma}^\pm \), on \( x, \mp s x \) is positive definite, and \( s_0 \) has signature \( (1, 2) \) on \( D_{\sigma}^\pm \) and \( (2, 1) \) on \( D_{\sigma}^0 \). Thus \( P_{2k} = \pm s_{2k} \).

Pick \( z \in Z^k = \overline{Q} \delta_\pm \) and \( \eta \in D_0 \). Then we have

\[
[z + \eta; \tau, z]_k = \langle [z + \eta; \tau, z]_k \rangle_{[\eta; \tau, z]} \rangle_{[\eta; \tau, z]}^{k} = \sum_{j=0}^{k} \binom{k}{j} \langle [z + \eta; \tau, z]_k \rangle_{[\eta; \tau, z]}^{k-j} \rangle_{[\eta; \tau, z]}^{j}
\]

For \( \eta = \left( \begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ c & d \end{array} \right) \), noting \( \text{Re} (p(\tau, z) \in D_0 \otimes \mathbb{Q} \mathbb{R} \text{ and } \text{Im} (p(\tau, z) \in Z \otimes \mathbb{Q} \mathbb{R}, \)

\[
[z + \eta; \tau, z] = [\eta; \tau, z] (1) \left( \begin{array}{cc} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{array} \right) \end{array} \right) \right) (z - \overline{z}) = s(\eta, \text{Re} (p(\tau, z)) \in \mathbb{R} \),

\[
[z + \eta; \tau, z] = j(z - \overline{z}).
\]

\[
[z + \eta; z, \tau] = (z - \overline{z}) = s(\eta, \text{Re} (p(\tau, z)) \in \mathbb{R} \),

\[
[z + \eta; z, \tau] = |z + \eta; z, \tau|^2 - 2 \Im(z - \overline{z}).
\]
Write
\[
\Psi^D_j(\tau, z; \bar{\gamma}) := (z - \bar{\tau})^{-j} [g; z, \bar{\gamma}] e(N(y)\tau^\pm + \frac{i \Im(\tau)[|g; z, \bar{\gamma}|^2}{2 \Im(z)^2}),
\]
\[
\Psi^Z_j(\tau, z; \bar{\gamma}) := \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
\frac{j^2 e(\bar{\gamma}^2 \tau^\pm)}{2 \Im(z)^2} & \text{in Case +}, \\
\frac{j^2 e(-\bar{\gamma}^2 \tau)}{2 \Im(z)^2} & \text{in Case -},
\end{array} \right.
\]
where \( \tau^\pm := \begin{cases} 
\tau & \text{in Case +}, \\
-\tau & \text{in Case -}.
\end{cases} \)

Since these functions for fixed \( \tau \) and \( z \) are restriction of a Schwartz function on \( D_{x, R} \) to \( Z_{R} \) and \( D_{0, R} \), they are Schwartz functions on the subspace. We get
\[
(4.16) \quad (z - \bar{\gamma})^k \phi_k = \sum_{j=0}^{k} (-1)^j \binom{k}{j} \phi_Z \Psi^Z_j \otimes \phi_0 \Psi^D_{k-j}.
\]

Recall from (4.15) the integral for \( F \in S_k^+(\Gamma, \varphi \chi_{D_0}) \):
\[
(4.17) \quad P'_k(F) = -\frac{\sqrt{-1}}{2} \int_{\Gamma \setminus \bar{\gamma} \mathfrak{H}} \int_{Sh} (z - \bar{\gamma})^k \theta(\phi(k)(\tau, z, z))g^{-2} dxdy F(\tau)\eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta.
\]

4.4. Siegel–Weil formula and period integrals. We now invoke the Siegel–Weil formula as described in (R). Since \( O_Z(\mathbb{R}) = \{\pm 1\} \), the variable \( g \in O_Z \) is trivial. Thus
\[
(4.18) \quad r_Z(\mathfrak{g}) L_Z(g) \Psi^Z_j(\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}; \bar{\gamma}) = \eta^{(1+2j)/4} \frac{j^2 e(\bar{\gamma}^2 \tau^\pm)}{2 \Im(z)^2} \eta^{(1+2j)/4} \Psi^Z_j(\tau, z; \bar{\gamma})
\]
\[
= \eta^{(1+2j)/4} \Psi^Z_j(\tau, z; \bar{\gamma}) \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
\eta^{(1+2j)/4} j^2 e(\bar{\gamma}^2 \tau) & \text{in Case +}, \\
\eta^{(1+2j)/4} j^2 e(-\bar{\gamma}^2 \tau) & \text{in Case -}.
\end{array} \right.
\]

Since the Clifford algebra of \( D_0 \) is \( D \), we find \( SO_{D_0}(\mathbb{R}) \cong \text{PGL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) by \( \phi_0 \), and
\[
(4.19) \quad r_{D_0}(g) L_{D_0}(g) \Psi^{D_0}_j(\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}; \bar{\gamma}) = \eta^{(3+2j)/4} \Psi^{D_0}_j(\tau, z; \bar{\gamma})
\]
\[
= \eta^{(3+2j)/4} \frac{(z - \bar{\gamma})^{-j} [g; z, \bar{\gamma}] e(N(y)\tau^\pm + \frac{i \Im(\tau)[|g; z, \bar{\gamma}|^2}{2 \Im(z)^2})}{2 \Im(z)^2}.
\]

Let \( \phi^{D_0}_j := \phi_0 \Psi^{D_0}_j \) and \( \phi^Z_j := \phi_Z \Psi^Z_j \). Then \( g \to (w_{D_0}(g) \phi^{D_0}_j)(0) \) is left-invariant under \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \subset \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \) for the metaplectic cover \( SL \) of \( SL \). For \( g \in \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}) \), decompose its image \( \bar{\gamma} \in SL_2(\mathbb{A}) \) into \( bk \) for \( k \in SL_2(\mathbb{Z})SO_2(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( b \in B(\mathbb{A}) \). Writing \( b = \left( \begin{array}{cc} a & * \\ 0 & 1 \end{array} \right) \), consider the Siegel Eisenstein series
\[
E(\phi^{D_0}_j)(s; g) := \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q})/SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} |a_{\gamma,g}|^{s-(1/2)}(w_{D_0}(\gamma g) \phi^{D_0}_j)(0).
\]

This Eisenstein series has meromorphic continuation over \( s \in \mathbb{C} \) and finite at \( s = \frac{1}{2} \) [Sw90, Theorem 3.3.1] (or [MSS, §5.3]): so, we define \( E(\phi^{D_0}_j)(g) := E(\phi^{D_0}_j)(\frac{1}{2}; g) \). This shows \( \Theta(\phi) = \eta^{1+(k/2)} \theta(\phi) \) is the sum of the product of Weil’s theta series as in Theorem 1.1 of \( \phi^{D_0}_j(\sqrt{-1}; z) = \phi^{D_0}_j(\kappa(\mathbb{A})) \Psi^{D_0}_j(\sqrt{-1}; \kappa) \) and \( \phi^Z_j(\bar{\gamma}) = \phi_Z(\kappa(\mathbb{A})) \Psi^Z_j(\sqrt{-1}; \kappa) \).

Recall the maximal order \( R \). Let \( O_\Delta(A) = \{ x \in (R \otimes \mathbb{Z} A)^{\times} \} \) as in (4.13) taking \( \alpha = \delta \). Then we have \( Sh = O_\Delta(\mathbb{Q})O_\Delta(\mathbb{A})/\Gamma_\delta C_\delta \) for the maximal compact subgroup \( C_\delta = O_2(\mathbb{R}) \) fixing \( -\tau \). Choose a lattice \( L \subset D_\alpha \) and assume \( L = L_{\mathbb{Z}} \oplus L_0 \subset D_\alpha \) for lattices \( L_\mathbb{Z} \subset Z \) and \( L_0 \subset D_0 \). Take the characteristic function \( \phi_0 = \phi_{L_0} \) of \( \Gamma_0 \subset D_0 \otimes \mathbb{Q} \kappa(\mathbb{A}) \). We choose later the finite part \( \phi_0 \) of \( \phi \) which has open support in \( L_{\mathbb{Z}} \). We assume that \( \phi(\mathbb{A}) = \phi_Z \otimes \phi_{L_0} \).

As the Siegel–Weil formula is stated with respect to the theta series of variable \( g \in O_\Delta(\mathbb{A}) \) (not with respect to \( z \) ), we lift \( \theta(\phi_0)(\tau; z, z) \) to the function \( \Theta(\phi_0)(\tau; g) \) in the standard way by
\[
\Theta(\phi_k)(\tau; g) = \theta(\phi_k)(\tau; g(\sqrt{-1}), g(\sqrt{-1})); j(g, \sqrt{-1})^{-2k} |j(g, \sqrt{-1})|^{z \gamma + \bar{\gamma} + l} \quad (|z \gamma + \bar{\gamma} + l| = |cz + d|)
\]
so \( \Theta(\phi_k)(\tau; g) = \theta(\phi_k)(\tau; z, z)g^b \). The lifted theta series \( \Theta(\phi^Z_j)(\tau; g) = \sum_{g \in \mathbb{Z}} w(g) \phi^Z_j(\bar{\gamma}) \) is the Siegel–Weil theta series as in Theorem 1.1. We take the Haar measure \( d\mu_\mathbb{Z} \) on \( O_\Delta(\mathbb{A}) \) so that it induces
the discrete Dirac measure on $O_{3}(Q)$, measure of volume 1 on $\hat{G}_{3}C_{3}$ and $y^{-2}dxdy$ on $\mathfrak{g} = O_{3}(R)/C_{3}$. By the Siegel–Weil formula in [Sw90, Theorem 3.3.1] (or [MSS, (5.3.3)])

\begin{equation}
(4.20) \quad (2\sqrt{-1})^{-k} \int_{Sh} \eta^{1+(k/2)}(z - \overline{z})^{k}\theta(\phi_{k})(\tau; z, z)y^{-2}dxdy
\end{equation}

\begin{equation}
= \int_{O_{n}(Q)\backslash O_{n}(A)/\hat{T}_{\hat{A}}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; g)\mu_{g} = m \sum_{j=0}^{k} \binom{k}{j} (-1)^{j}\theta(\phi^{j})E(\phi^{D_{0}/\hat{G}_{3}}) \text{ for a constant } m \neq 0.
\end{equation}

4.5. Mass factor $m$. Let us make $m$ explicit. Recall the Haar measure $d\mu_{g}$ defined above (4.20). Then we have

\begin{equation}
(4.21) \quad \eta^{1+(k/2)} \int_{Sh} \theta(\phi_{k})(\tau; z, z)y^{k-2}dxdy = \eta^{1+(k/2)} \int_{O_{n}(Q)\backslash O_{n}(A)/\hat{T}_{\hat{A}}} \theta(\phi_{k})(\tau; g(\sqrt{-1}), g(\sqrt{-1}))d\mu_{g}
\end{equation}

\begin{equation}
= \eta^{1+(k/2)} \int_{O_{n}(Q)\backslash O_{n}(A)/\hat{T}_{\hat{A}}} \theta(\phi_{k})(\tau; g, g)d\mu_{g} = m \sum_{j=0}^{k} \binom{k}{j} (-1)^{j}\theta(\phi^{j})E(\phi^{D_{0}/\hat{G}_{3}})
\end{equation}

for $m > 0$ such that $d\mu_{g} = \frac{m}{2}d\omega_{O_{3}}$ for the half of the Tamagawa measure $d\omega_{O_{3}}$ of $O_{3}$. The factor $\frac{1}{2}$ is to kill the Tamagawa number $\tau(O_{3}) = 2$ so that theta integral with respect to $\frac{1}{2}d\omega_{O_{3}}$ and Siegel–Eisenstein series exactly match. The following result valid for indefinite and also definite $D$ is due to Shimura [Sh99]:

**Theorem 4.2.** Replace $s^{\pm}$ by $\varphi = es^{\pm}$ for $0 \neq e \in Z$ with minimal $|e|$ so that the discriminant of $\varphi|_{D_{0}^{\pm}}$ is a square in $Q^{\times}$ (cf. Remark 3.1). Take the measure $d\mu_{g}$ on $O(Q)\backslash O_{n}(A)$ with volume 1 on $\hat{G}_{3}C_{3}$ for a maximal compact subgroup $C_{3}$ of $O_{3}(R)$ with invariant measure $y^{-2}dxdy$ on $\mathfrak{g}$ if $D_{0} \cong M_{2}(R)$, and let $L := R \cap D_{0}^{\pm}$ with $\hat{L}_{\delta} := \{ x \in O_{3}(A^{\infty}) | xLx^{-1} = L \} = \{ x \in O_{3}(A^{\infty}) | xLx^{-1} = \hat{L} \}$. Then, defining $(\hat{G}_{L} : \hat{\delta} L) := (\hat{G}_{L} : \hat{\delta} \cap \hat{G}_{L})/(\hat{\delta} : \hat{\delta} \cap \hat{G}_{L})$ and assuming (4.14), we have

\begin{equation}
m = m(L, \hat{\delta} L) = (\hat{G}_{L} : \hat{\delta} L)[\hat{L} : L] \left[ \prod_{l \in \partial} 2^{-1}(1 + l)^{-1}(1 - l^{-2})^{1/2} \right] \frac{\zeta(2)}{\pi^{2}D},
\end{equation}

where $\hat{L} := \{ x \in D_{0}^{\pm} | \varphi(x, L) \subset Z \}$ and $\epsilon_{D} = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll} 1 & \text{if } D_{0} \cong M_{2}(R), \\ 2 & \text{if } D_{0} \cong H. \end{array} \right.$

Defining $L' := \{ x \in D_{0}^{\pm} | \varphi(x, L) \subset Z \}$, $\hat{L} = (2e^{-1})L', [\hat{L} : L] = 2^{k\epsilon_{D}[L'] : L}$, and $[L' : L]$ is the absolute value of the discriminant of $s_{L}$. The constant $e$ can be taken a factor of $\Delta[d_{K}]$ as $d(D_{0}) \sim \pm \Delta d_{K}$. In particular, if $E \hookrightarrow D$ (i.e., $D_{E} \cong M_{2}(E)$), we can take $K = E$ and hence $e = 1$.

**Proof.** In [Sh99, Theorem 5.8], the volume $\int_{SO_{V}(Q)\backslash SO_{V}(A)/\hat{G}_{V}}d\mu'$ is computed with respect to the measure $d\mu'$ Shimura specified. For a maximal lattice $L \subset V$ (i.e., maximal among lattices with given fractional ideal $\mathfrak{M}$ generated by $Q(L)$), the measure $d\mu'$ has volume 1 over $\hat{G}_{L}C_{V}$ for a maximal compact subgroup $C_{V} \subset SO_{V}(R)$ and $\hat{G}_{L} = \{ x \in SO_{V}(A^{\infty}) | \hat{L}x = \hat{L} \}$ (note that Shimura takes a convention of right action of his orthogonal group on $V$). The following three facts are noteworthy:

- $Sh_{3} = O_{3}(Q)\backslash O_{3}(A)/\hat{G}_{3}C_{3} = SO_{3}(Q)\backslash SO_{3}(A)/\hat{G}_{3}C_{3}$ under (4.14) (see (4.22)).
- The Tamagawa number formula $\tau(O) = 2$ given by Weil [W65] does not give an exact formula of the volume, as we need to know the exact ratio of the Tamagawa measure $\frac{1}{2}d\omega$ and the more arithmetic measure $d\mu$ related to the L-value.
- Though the volume is calculated earlier by Shimizu [Sh65] for the algebraic group $D^{\times}$ when $D$ is indefinite (here $O_{3}$ and $D^{\times}$ are different groups), the definite case of $V = D_{0}$ is elusive (because of non-validity of strong approximation outside an archimedean place), and there is only a partial computation by Siegel for $O_{3}$ and Eichler for $D^{\times}$. The paper [Sh99] gives an explicit form of the arithmetic measure on the symmetric space of the orthogonal group and the exact volume via Dedekind L-values for any quadratic space over a totally real field of
any dimension. When the base field has a complex place, there seems no existing literature computing the exact volume.

We specialize Shimura’s result to \(O_δ = O_D_0\) and \(V = D_0\). We may assume that \(\hat{Γ}_δ = \hat{Γ}_L\) as the general formula follows directly from [Sh99, (5.8.1)]. If \(D\) is definite, the symmetric space for \(SO_3(\mathbb{R})\) is one point, and we take the volume 1-measure on \(\hat{Γ}_δSO_3(\mathbb{R})\). Assuming \(D_0 \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})\), we choose \(C_D\) fixing \((1,0)\) in the symmetric domain \(Z\) defined in [Sh99, §4.2] and take \(L := R \cap D_0\) which is a maximal lattice. To get the exact value, we need to describe \(Z\) and its measure. Here, as in [Sh99, §4.1], for \(V = D_0\),

\[
Z := \{(u, v) \in \mathbb{R}^2 | 2u > -v^2/2\}.
\]

Then putting \(B(z) = \begin{pmatrix} u & v \\ -v & u \end{pmatrix}\) for \(z = (u, v) \in Z\), \(\alpha \in SO_3(\mathbb{R})\) acts on \(Z\) by \(\alpha B(z) = B(\alpha(z)) \text{diag}[\kappa, \mu]\) for two automorphic factor \(\mu \in \mathbb{C}^\times\) and \(\kappa \in GL_2(\mathbb{C})\). Here we regard \(SO_3 = SO_D_0\) as the special orthogonal group with respect to the anti diagonal symmetric matrix \(S' = (\text{Tr}(v_i v_j'))_{i,j}\). Then \(S'\) is anti-diagonal with anti-diagonal entries \(-1, -2, -1\) in order. Since Shimura normalizes \(S'\) via conjugation by \(GL_3(\mathbb{R})\) and a scalar multiplication so that the center entry is positive, we conjugate by \(Ad(\text{diag}[1, -1]) \in GL_3(\mathbb{R})\) and multiplying by \(-1\) to reach

\[
S = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix},
\]

getting the center entry \(2\) positive which plays the role of \(\theta_v\) for \(v = \infty\) in [Sh99, (5.3.2)]. This is because \(Ad(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})) \cong SO_3(\mathbb{R})\), and in this way, we identify \(I : \mathfrak{h} \cong \mathbb{R}^2\) sending \(\sqrt{-1}\) to \((1, 0)\) and \(I(g(z)) = Ad(g)(I(z))\) for \(g \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\).

To make the isomorphism explicit, we choose a basis \(\mathcal{B}\) of \(\mathfrak{sl}(2)\) given by \(\mathcal{B} := \{U, \text{diag}[1, -1], U\}\) for \(U = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}\) to compute \(Ad\). To get the isomorphism between \(\mathfrak{h}\) and \(Z\) via \(I(a^2\sqrt{-1} + ab) = I(g(\sqrt{-1})) = Ad(g)((1, 0))\) for \(g = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix}\), we compute \(Ad(\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix})\) with respect to \(\mathcal{B}\). Though we conjugated by \(Ad(\text{diag}[1, -1])\), we can make variable change \(z \mapsto -\overline{z}\) to absorb this maneuver without changing the invariant measure; so, we forget about it. Note \(Ad(\alpha)(x) = \alpha^{-1}x\alpha\) with respect to \(\mathcal{B}\) for \(\alpha \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\) as Shimura chooses right multiplication of orthogonal group action on quadratic spaces. Then

\[
Ad(\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix}) = \begin{pmatrix} a^2 & ab \\ 0 & a^{-2} \end{pmatrix} \text{ and } Ad(\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ 0 & a^{-1} \end{pmatrix}) B((1, 0)) = \begin{pmatrix} a^2 & ab \\ 0 & a^{-2} \end{pmatrix} = B((u, v)) \text{diag}[\kappa, \mu].
\]

Thus \(\mu = a^{-2}\) and \(u = a^2(b^2 - b^2)\) and \(v = 2ab\). Shimura’s measure corresponds to the differential form \((2^{-1}(2u + v^2/2) - 3^{-1/2}du \wedge dv = sa^{-2}du \wedge db = 4y^{-2}dx \wedge dy + iy = (a b) (i)(a^2 i + ab)\). Thus we need to modify Shimura’s exact value by the factor \(4\). Noting \(SO_D_0 = SO_3\) and \(C_D_0 = C_0\), here is his value in [Sh99, Theorem 5.8]

\[
\int_{SO_3(\mathbb{Q})/SO_3(\mathbb{A})/\hat{Γ}_L\mathbb{C}5} d\mu' = 2(4\pi)^{1-\epsilon} \zeta(2) \left|\prod_{l \mid \mathfrak{d}} 2^{-1}(1 + l)^{-1}(1 - l^{-2})\right| \frac{\zeta(2)}{\pi},
\]

where \(\hat{L} := \{x \in V | 2s(x, L) \subseteq Z\}\). We have \(4d\mu_{\mathfrak{d}} = d\mu'\) if \(D_\mathfrak{d} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})\) and \(d\mu' = d\mu_\mathfrak{d}\) when \(D_\mathfrak{d} \cong \mathbb{H}\) by our choice. Also as remarked in [Sh99, Lemma 5.6], the volume for \(O_3\) is twice of the one for \(SO_3\). Since \(\hat{Γ}_L \subset \hat{Γ}_L\) is a subgroup of finite index, multiplying the index \((\hat{Γ}_L : \hat{Γ}_\delta)\), we get the final formula as in the theorem.

\begin{remark}
Take \(E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q}\) and \(\delta = (1, -1)\). Let \(N_0 = 1\) and \(D/\mathfrak{q}\) be a definite quaternion ramifying at only one odd prime \(p\). Let \(L = R \cap D_\mathfrak{p}\). Then \(R_\mathfrak{p} \cong \{\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ b & a \end{pmatrix} | a, b \in K\}\) for the unramified quadratic extension \(K = \mathbb{Q}_p(\sqrt{a})/\mathbb{Q}_p\) for a \(p\)-adic unit \(u\). Thus \(L \cong \{\begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ b & a \end{pmatrix} | a, b \in K\}\). An orthogonal basis of \(L\) over \(\mathbb{Z}_p\) is given by \(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}\), \(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sqrt{a} \\ -p & 0 \end{pmatrix}\) and \(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -p & 0 \end{pmatrix}\). Thus det \(s_+\) with respect to this basis is given by \(2p^2u^2\). Thus \(e = 2^{-1}\) for \(e\) as in Theorem 4.2. By [Sh99, (3.1.9)], we have \(\mathfrak{L} : L = \left|\det(s_+)^{p_{-1}}\right| p^2 = p^2\). Thus

\[
m = m(L, \hat{Γ}_L) = p^2(1 + p)^{-1}(1 - p^{-2}) \frac{\zeta(2)}{\pi} = \frac{(p - 1) \zeta(2)}{\pi^2}.
\]
\end{remark}
We need to specify $\Gamma_\delta$ to make $m = m(L, \tilde{\Gamma}_\delta)$ explicit down-to-earth. For $l \not| \partial$, we identify $R_l = R \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} Z_l$ with $M_2(Z_l)$. The Eichler order of level $l^e$ of $R_l = R \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} Z_l$ is given by

$$R_l(l^e) := \{ (\alpha, \beta) \mid \alpha \in M_2(Z_l); \beta \in l^e \}$$

identifying $R \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} Z_l$ with $M_2(Z_l)$. Fix a level $N_0$ prime to $\partial$ with prime factorization $\prod \mathfrak{p}^{n_0}$, and define the Eichler order $R(N_0) \subset D$ of level $N_0$ by $D \cap \tilde{R}(N_0)$ for $\tilde{R}(N_0) := \hat{R}(N_0) \times \prod \mathfrak{p}^{n_0} R_l(l^e)$, where $\hat{R}(N_0) := \tilde{R}_{\mathfrak{p}^{n_0}} R_l$.

Recall $\delta_+ = 1$ and $\delta_- = \sqrt{\Delta_-}$ for the square free part $\Delta_. \Delta$ of $\Delta$. Note $D_0^\pm = \{ v \in D | \text{Tr}(v) = 0 \}$. For an integer $N_0$ outside $\partial$, decomposing $N_0 = \prod l^{n_0}$, we define $R_0(N_0) = D_0 \cap \delta_\pm R(N_0)$, which we call the Eichler lattice of level $N_0$. We take $\phi_{\delta}^{(\infty)}$ to be the characteristic function of $R_0(N_0) = R_0(N_0) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \hat{Z} \subset D_{0, \delta(\infty)}$. Then $\Gamma_\delta = \{ \gamma \in SO_\delta(Q) \mid \gamma \mathcal{R}_0(N_0)^{-1} \subset R_0(N_0) \} \cong R(N_0)^\times / \{ \pm 1 \}$. Here, as algebraic groups over $\mathbb{Q}$, we identify $D^\times / Z(D^\times)$ (for the center $Z(D^\times)$ of $D^\times$) with $SO_\delta$ with $\phi_0$ in §3.1. Since $O_\delta = SO_\delta \sqcup SO_{\delta^*}$ (the involution $i$ regarded as an $\mathbb{Q}$-linear automorphism of $D_0$),

$$(4.22) \quad \text{Sh}_\delta = O_\delta(Q) \setminus O_\delta(A), \tilde{\Gamma}_\delta C_{\infty}(\delta) \cong D^\times \setminus D^\times / A^\times \hat{R}(N_0)^\times C_{\infty}(D^\times),$$

where $C_{\infty}(G)$ is a maximal compact subgroup of the identity connected component of $G(\mathbb{R})$ for a reductive group $G_{L, Q}$. As is well known, we have $[\hat{R}^\times : \hat{R}(N_0)^\times] = N_0 \prod l^{n_0}(1 + l^{-1})$. Then by Theorem 4.2 (and (Sh99, (5.8.1))) gives the following mass factor

$$(4.23) \quad m = m(L, \tilde{\Gamma}_\delta) := N_0[\tilde{L} : L] \prod_{l^{n_0}} \left[ \prod (1 + l^{-1}) \prod_{l^{n_0}} 2^{-1}(1 + l)^{-1}(1 - l^2) \right] \frac{\Omega(2)}{\pi^{r_D}}.$$  

We again note here that we need to assume (4.14) as Shimura’s computation is done for $SO$ and we need the result for $O$, and under (4.14), the formula for $SO$ and for $O$ is identical.

4.6. Choice of $\phi_Z$. We make an explicit choice of $\phi$ (and the theta series) for $(Z^+, Q^\times)$. To use the results also for imaginary $E$, we do not assume that $E$ is real in this subsection.

For a lattice $L$ of a quadratic space $(V, Q)$, we write $\phi_{L_\nu} : V_{K(\infty)} \to \{ 0, 1 \}$ for the characteristic function of $L = L \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}} \hat{Z}$. More generally, write $\phi_{L, \nu}$ for the characteristic function of $v + L$. Let $L^* = \{ v \in V | s(v, L) \subset Z \}$ (the dual lattice). Then we define the level $0 < M = M_L \in Z$ by the minimal positive integer such that $\mathbb{M} \cdot s[L^*] \subset 2Z$ (or equivalently $\mathbb{M} \cdot Q(L) \subset Z$).

First, we deal with $(Z^+, Q^\times)$, which is always positive definite with $Q^+(x) = x^2$ and $\delta_+ = 1$. We take a lattice $L = L_{++} := NZ^+ \subset Z^+$. Since $L^* = (2N)^{-1}L$, the level of $L = NZ$ is given by $M_Z := MN_Z = 4N^2$. Put $\phi_Z := \sum_{v \in V_{K(\infty)}} \psi(v) \phi_{L, \nu}$ for a primitive Dirichlet character $\psi$ modulo $N$.

We write this function on $Z_{K(\infty)} = A(\infty)$ as $\psi_{L^*}$. For an integer $k \geq 0$ with $\psi(z^{\infty}) z_k^{\infty}$ is an even function on $Z_k = A$, we define $\psi_{k, \infty} : \Re \to C$ by $\psi_{k, \infty}(\tau, z) := z^k e(\tau z^2)$ ($\tau = \xi + \sqrt{-1} \eta \in \Re$). Then $\theta(\phi_Z^k) = \eta(k+1/4) \theta_k(\psi)$ for

$$\theta_k(\psi) := \theta(\psi, \psi_{k, \infty}) = \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(n) n^k e(n^2 \tau).$$

For $k = \{ 0, 1 \}$, $\theta_k(\psi)$ is a modular form on $\Gamma_0(M_{4Z})$ for $M_{4Z} = 4N^2$ of weight $k + \frac{1}{2}$ with Neben character $\psi_1 = (\Delta_\tau)^k \psi$ in Shimura’s sense as described in §1.3. For $k > 1$, $\theta_k(\psi)$ has mixed weight.

Second, take $D_\sigma = D_{\sigma^-}$ with $E$ imaginary. Recall $\delta_+ = \sqrt{\Delta_-}$ for the square-free part $\Delta_- < 0$ of $\Delta$ and $Q^-(\delta_- x) = |\Delta_-| x^2$ from $(Z^\times)$ in §3.1. We take $L_- = \delta_- NZ$. The dual lattice $L^*$ is given by $\delta_-^{-1}(2N)^{-1}Z = \delta_-^{-1}(2N)^{-1}Z$. Thus $N(L^*) = \Delta_-^{-1}(2N)^{-2}$; so, $M_Z := M_{LZ} = 4|\Delta_-.N|^2$. For a Dirichlet character $\psi$ modulo $N$, we take $\phi_Z := \sum_{\nu \in (\delta_- \mathbb{Z} / \delta_+ \mathbb{Z})} \psi(\delta_- \nu) \phi_{L_{\nu}^\times}$. Then $\theta(\phi_Z^k) = \eta(k+1/4) \theta_k(\psi)([\Delta_-])$, where $f([\Delta_-](\tau) = f([\Delta_-](\tau)$ and $\delta^k$ are the front of the left-hand-side comes from our choice of Schwartz function $\phi_{\infty}(x) = Q^-(x)^k e(Q^-(x) \tau)$. In the half integral case, this operation changes the Neben character $\psi$ of $f$ to $\psi(\Delta_\tau)$ [Sh73, Proposition 1.3].

Last, take $D_\sigma = D_{\sigma^-}$ with $E$ real. Recall $\delta_+ > 0$. We take $L_+ = \delta_- NZ$. Then $Q^-(\delta_+ n) = -\Delta_- n^2$ is negative definite. The dual lattice $L^*$ is given by $\delta_+^{-1}(2N)^{-1}Z = \delta_+^{-1}(2N)^{-1}Z$. Thus $N(L^*) = \Delta_+^{-1}(2N)^{-2}$; so, $M_Z := M_{LZ} = 4\Delta_- N^2$. For a Dirichlet character $\psi$ modulo $N$,
we take \( \phi_Z := \sum_{v \in (\delta, Z/\delta, N \mathbb{Z})} \psi(\delta - v) \phi_{L \cdot v} \). Then \( \theta(\phi_Z^2) = \eta^{(k+1)/4} \delta^k(\theta_k(\psi)(|\Delta_-|)(-\tau)) \), where we need to plug in \(-\tau\) by the standard choice of Schwartz function \( \phi_\infty(x) = Q^-(x)^k e(-Q^-(x)\tau) \).

In summary, we find

\[
M_{Z\pm} = 4|\delta^2_+ |N^2.
\]

### 4.7. Verification of the assumption \( (V) \)

For the Eichler order \( R(N_0) \) of level \( N_0 \), we take two lattices in \( D_0 \) which are

\[
L = R_0(N_0) = \{ v \in \delta_T R(N_0)|v + v' = 0 \} \subset D_0^\perp \text{ and } cL \subset D_0^\perp \text{ for a chosen } 0 < c \in \mathbb{Z},
\]

which has a \( \mathbb{Z}_t \)-basis \( \{ \delta_T \text{ diag}[1, -1], \delta_T U \text{ with } U = (0 \ 1), \delta_T N_0^\perp U \} \) for \( l \neq 0 \) whose dual basis is

\[
\{ 2^{-1} \delta^{-1}_T \text{ diag}[1, -1], N_0^{-1} \delta^{-1}_T U = \left( \begin{array}{c} 0 \ 1 \\ 0 \ 1 \end{array} \right) , \delta^{-1}_T U \}.
\]

If \( l \neq 0 \), \( R_1 \) is killed by \( l \); hence, the level \( M_L \) of \( L \) is \( 4N_0 \delta^2_\perp \) as \( D_0^\perp = \delta_- D_0^- \). Similarly the level of \( cL \) is \( M_{cL} = 4N_0 \delta^2_\perp \). Taking \( \phi \) to be

\[
(4.25) \quad \phi^{(\infty)}_0 = c_0^{-1}(\phi_L - c^3 \phi_{cL}) \quad \text{ for } c_0 = 1 - c^3 \quad \text{ with } 1 < c \in \mathbb{Z} \quad \text{ and } \quad \phi_0 = c_0^{-1}(\phi_L - c^3 \phi_{cL}) \cdot \phi_\infty.
\]

Then \( \Gamma_\tau = \Gamma_0(M) \) for

\[
(4.26) \quad M = M_{\pm} = [4|\delta^2_\perp|N^2, 4c^2|\delta^2_\perp|N_0 \delta](\text{ the LCM of } 4|\delta^2_\perp|N^2 \text{ and } 4c^2|\delta^2_\perp|N_0 \delta)).
\]

This formula is valid for \( E \) both real and imaginary. Writing \( \hat{\Gamma}_\tau \) for the closure of \( \Gamma_\tau \) in \( \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}^{(\infty)}) \), \( \hat{\Gamma}_\tau = \hat{\Gamma}_0(M) \supset B(\mathbb{Z}) \).

**Lemma 4.4.** We have \( r \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \end{array} \right) \phi_0^{(\infty)}(0) = |a|^{3/2} \text{ and } r(J \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \end{array} \right) ) \phi_0^{(\infty)}(0) = 0 \text{ for all } \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \end{array} \right) \in B(\mathbb{A}) \). For any Schwartz function \( \phi_\infty \) on \( D^\perp_{\sigma, R} \), \( \Phi(g) = (r(g)(\phi_0^{(\infty)} \phi_\infty))(0) \) with \( \phi_0^{(\infty)} \) in (4.25) satisfies the condition \( (V) \) in §2.4.

**Proof.** We have \( \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \end{array} \right) = \left( \begin{array}{c} 1 \\ 0 \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{array} \right) \cdot \left( \begin{array}{c} a \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{array} \right) \cdot \left( \begin{array}{c} 0 \\ 1 \end{array} \right) \text{ of Theorem 2.3 does not depend on the level } \mathbb{M} \text{. Then by taking } v = 0, \text{ the first assertion follows. Since } r(J) \phi \text{ is proportional to the Fourier transform } \hat{\phi} = \mathcal{F}(\phi) \text{ by a constant independent of } \phi, \text{ we need to compute the finite part of the Fourier transform over } V^{(\infty)} = V^{\hat{\phi}} = \hat{\phi}^{(\infty)} :$

\[
(4.27) \quad c_0 \mathcal{F}(|a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_0^{(\infty)}(av))(0) = c_0 \int_{V^{(\infty)}} |a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_0^{(\infty)}(av)\mathbf{e}(s_\pm(v, w))dw|_{w=0} = \int_{V^{(\infty)}} |a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_L^{(\infty)}(av)\mathbf{e}(s_\pm(v, w))dw - c^3 \int_{V^{(\infty)}} |a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_{cL}^{(\infty)}(av)dw = c^{-1} \int_{V^{(\infty)}} |a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_L^{(\infty)}(av)dw - c^3 \int_{V^{(\infty)}} |a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_{cL}^{(\infty)}(av)dw = 0.
\]

The value of \( \Phi(g) \) for \( g \in JB(\mathbb{A}) \) is proportional to \( \mathcal{F}(|a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi_0^{(\infty)}(av))(0) \) in (4.27) times the corresponding Fourier transform \( \mathcal{F}(|a|^{3/2} \mathbf{e}(\pm N(v)b)\phi^{(\infty)}(a_\infty v_\infty))(0) \) at \( \infty \) by (4.25). Then the condition \( (V) \) follows from the vanishing of (4.27). \( \square \)

**Remark 4.5.** The convolution integral over \( B(\mathbb{A}) \) of Theorem 2.3 does not depend on the level \( \mathbb{M} \), and the integral over \( B(\mathbb{A}) \) with respect to \( \phi_0^{(\infty)} \) and \( \phi_L^{(\infty)} \) are equal, since \( E(\phi^{(\infty)} \phi_\infty) = E(\phi_L^{(\infty)} \phi_\infty) \) over \( B(\mathbb{A}) \). Thus we hereafter forget about the part \( c^3 \phi_L^{(\infty)} \) from the integral over \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \) \( B(\mathbb{Q}) \) with respect to \( E(\phi_L^{(\infty)} \phi_\infty) \) and \( \theta(\phi_L^{(\infty)} \phi_\infty) \). Hence hereafter \( \phi_j^D_0 = \phi_L^{(\infty)} \Psi_j^D_0 \) of §4.4 in Case RI (and in the other cases, for the Schwartz function \( \Psi_j^D_0 \) defined later case by base).
4.8. Verification of the assumption (Key). To show the assumption (Key) in Theorem 2.6, we need to compute \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(g_r)) \) and \( (r(g_r)\phi_{\theta}^{D_0})(0) \). For \( \Phi \in S(D_0,A) \), we have
\[
\begin{align*}
  r_Q(\alpha(\xi))\Phi(x) &= e\left(-\frac{\xi}{2}\right)\xi\Phi(x) \quad \text{for} \quad \alpha(\xi) = \left(\frac{\xi}{2}\right), \\
  r_Q(\text{diag}(\eta^{1/2},\eta^{-1/2}))\Phi(x) &= \eta^{3/4}\Phi(\eta^{1/2}x),
\end{align*}
\]
(4.28)
\[
  r_Q(g_r)\Phi(x) = r_Q(\alpha(\xi))\Phi(\eta^{1/2}\eta^{-1/2})\Phi(x) = \eta^{3/4}e\left(-\frac{\xi}{2}\right)\xi\Phi(\eta^{1/2}x).
\]
By this,
\[
r(g_r)(\phi_0)(0) = 0 \Leftrightarrow \phi(0) = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad r(g_r)(\phi_0)(0) = \eta^{3/4} \quad \text{if} \quad \phi(0) = 1.
\]
Note \( \phi_{\theta}^{D_0}(0) = 0 \) unless \( k = j \) as its infinite part is given by (4.19). This verifies the assumption (Key) in Theorem 2.6.

4.9. Convolution. Let \( C_\infty = \pi^{-1}(SO_2(\mathbb{R})) \subseteq Mp(A) \) for the projection \( \pi : Mp(A) \to SL_2(A) \) and \( d\mu_r \) be the Haar measure inducing \( \eta^{-2}d\xi d\eta \) on \( \widehat{\mathbb{F}} \); the volume measure on \( \widehat{\Gamma_r} \subseteq Mp(A) \) and the Dirac measure on each element of \( SL_2(Q) \subseteq Mp(A) \). Write \( \widehat{\mathbb{F}} := B(Q) \backslash B(A)/B(\mathbb{Z}). \) Thus \( \widehat{\mathbb{F}} \cong U(\mathbb{Z}) \backslash \widehat{\mathbb{F}} \) for the unipotent radical \( U \) of \( B \). Lift \( F \in S^+(\Gamma, \varphi \chi_{D_r}) \) as in (2.1), \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}) \) and \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2) \) to \( Mp(A) \) as in (4.19) and (4.18). From this, we have the following identities
\[
F(\tau) = F(g_r)\eta^{k/2}, \quad \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{1+2k}/4) = \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(g_r)), \quad E(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}(\tau))\eta^{3/4} = E(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}(g_r)),
\]
where \( E(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}(\tau)) \) is the Eisenstein series as a function on \( \widehat{\mathbb{F}} \) and \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2)(h) = \sum \varphi(V(e)(\mathbb{w})(\mathbb{h})(\mathbb{w})^2)(v) \) for \( V = D_0 \) and \( Z \). Note the exponent of \( \eta \) for the lifting is the same for \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}) \) and \( E(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0}) \). Then \( F \) and \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2) \) is a function on \( SL_2(Q) \backslash Mp(A) \). Since \( B(\mathbb{R})SO_2(\mathbb{R}) = SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( SL_2(\mathbb{A}_f) = SL_2(Q) \backslash \widehat{\mathbb{F}} \) by strong approximation, we have \( SL_2(Q)B(A)\widehat{\Gamma}_rC_\infty = Mp(A) \). We have
\[
(4.30) \quad \int_{X_0(M)} F(g_r) \sum_{j=0}^k (-1)^j \binom{k}{j} \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{j+1+2k}/4)\eta^{3/4} d\mu_r(h)
\]
\[
= \int_{X_0(M)} \sum_{j=0}^k (-1)^j \binom{k}{j} \sum_{\gamma \in B(Q) \backslash SL_2(Q)} F\gamma h)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\gamma(\gamma h)(\mathbb{w})(\mathbb{h})(\mathbb{w})^2)(0)) d\mu_r(h)
\]
\[
\overset{(*)}{=} \int_{\mathbb{F}} \sum_{j=0}^k (-1)^j \binom{k}{j} F(g_r)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(g_r)\tau) r(g_r)(\phi_{\theta}^{D_0})(0)) d\mu_r(b) \quad \text{(Remark 4.5)}
\]
\[
= (-1)^k \int_{\mathbb{F}} F(\tau)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{k+1} d\xi d\eta
\]
\[\overset{(Key)}{=} (-1)^k \int_{\mathbb{F}} F(\tau)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{k+1} d\xi d\eta = (-1)^k \int_0^1 \int_0^1 F(\tau)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{k+1} d\xi d\eta
\]
\[
= (-1)^k 2d^\frac{k}{2} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{\Delta \pm |n|^2} \psi(n)n^k \exp(-4\pi |\Delta \pm |n|^2\eta) \eta^{k-1} d\eta
\]
\[
= (-1)^k 2(4\pi)^{-k} \delta^k_{\pm} |\Delta \pm |^{-k} \Gamma(k) \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{\Delta \pm |n|^2} \psi(n)n^{-k}.
\]

Remark 4.6. To have the identity at (*), the conductor \( C \) of \( F \) has to be a factor of \( M \) as in (4.26).

By [HML, Theorem 2.65], we find the Neben character of \( \theta(\phi) \) is \( \psi_\chi \) for \( \chi_{D_r} = (\det(S)) \). Since the product of Neben character of \( \theta(\phi) \) and \( F \) has to be trivial, the cusp form \( F \) need to have Neben character \( \psi^{-1}\chi_{D_r} \). We put \( L = L_+ \oplus L_0 \) with \( L_0 \subseteq D_0 \) such that \( L_0 = R(N_0) \cap D_0 \) for an Eichler order \( R(N_0) \) in \( D_E \) of level \( N_0 \). Write \( \tau_+ = \tau \) and \( \tau_- = -\tau \). Note \( \theta(\phi_{\theta}^2) = \delta^\pm \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(n) n^k e(|\Delta \pm |n^2\tau_\pm) \), and write \( F(\tau) = \sum_{n=1}^\infty a_n e(n\tau_\pm) \in S^+(\mathbb{C}, \psi^{-1}\chi_{D_r}) \). Then (4.31) is equal to
\[
(4.32) \quad (-1)^k \int_{\mathbb{F}} F(\tau)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{k+1} d\xi d\eta = (-1)^k \int_0^1 \int_0^1 F(\tau)\theta(\phi_{\theta}^2(\tau)\eta^{k+1} d\xi d\eta
\]
\[
= (-1)^k 2d^\frac{k}{2} \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{\Delta \pm |n|^2} \psi(n)n^k \exp(-4\pi |\Delta \pm |n|^2\eta) \eta^{k-1} d\eta
\]
\[
= (-1)^k 2(4\pi)^{-k} \delta^k_{\pm} |\Delta \pm |^{-k} \Gamma(k) \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{\Delta \pm |n|^2} \psi(n)n^{-k}.
\]
Since \( \delta_+ > 0 \) when \( E \) is real, \( \delta_+ |\Delta \pm |^{-k} = \delta_-^{-k} \) (while \( \delta_+ |\Delta \pm |^{-k} = (-\delta_-)^{-k} \) if \( E \) is imaginary).
4.10. The period is an L-value. We study its Euler factorization assuming $F$ is a primitive eigenform in $S_k^\infty(C, \psi^\chi_{D_a})$ of conductor $C$. Put

$$D(s; F, \psi) := \sum_{n=1}^\infty \psi(n) a_n n^{-s}$$

for the primitive character $\psi_0$ induced by $\psi$.

Write $a_p = \alpha + \beta$ with $\alpha \beta = \psi^{-1} \chi_{D_a}(p)p^{k-1}$. If it is necessary to indicate the dependence on $p$, we write $\alpha_p$ for $\alpha$ and $\beta_p$ for $\beta$. Suppose first $\alpha \beta = \psi^{-1} \chi_{D_a}(p)p^{k-1} \neq 0$. Then $a_{\alpha \beta n} = \frac{\alpha^{2n+1} - \beta^{2n+1}}{\alpha - \beta}$. Thus by a well known computation

$$\sum_{n=0}^\infty a_{\alpha \beta n} X^n = \sum_{n=0}^\infty \left( \frac{\alpha^{2n+1} - \beta^{2n+1}}{\alpha - \beta} \right) X_n = \frac{(1 - \alpha^2 \beta^2 X^2)}{(1 - \alpha^2 X)(1 - \alpha \beta X)(1 - \beta^2 X)).$$

Suppose $\psi_0^{-1}(p) = \psi_0^{-1}(p)a_p \neq 0$ but $\beta = 0$. Then

$$\sum_{n=0}^\infty a_{\alpha \beta n} X^n = \sum_{n=0}^\infty \alpha^{2n} X^n = \frac{1}{1 - \alpha^2 X}$$

For an Euler product $L(s) = \prod_p E_p(s)^{-1}$, we write $L^{(m)}(s) := (\prod_{p|m} E_p(s))L(s)$ (removing Euler factors at $p|m$ for an integer $m > 0$). Let $C_0$ be the product of primes $p$ ramified in $E$ such that $\psi|_{\Delta_p} = \chi_E|_{\Delta_p}$ and the $p$-primary factors of $C$ equals to the $p$-conductor of $\chi_E$. Then for $p|C_0$, $\alpha \sigma_p = p^{k-1}$ and hence the Euler $p$-factor of $D(s; F, \psi)$ is given by

$$(1 - \alpha^2 p^{-s})^{-1} = (1 - \alpha \sigma_p^{-1} p^{k-1-s})^{-1}$$

which is a half of the Euler p-factor $(1 - \alpha \sigma_p^{-1} p^{k-1-s}^{-1})^{-1}(1 - \alpha^{-1} \sigma_p^{-1} p^{k-1-s}^{-1})^{-1}$ of $L(s-k+1, Ad(F) \otimes F)$. Thus one Euler p-factor of $L(s-k+1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E)$ is missing at $p|C_0$. This type of discrepancy does not occur at other prime factors of $C$. Thus writing $C_s(\psi)$ (resp. $C(\psi)$) for the product of prime factors $p$ of $C$ with either $a_p = 0$ or $\psi(p) = 0$ (resp. the conductor of $\psi$),

\begin{equation}
\zeta^{(C)}(2s + 2 - 2k)D(s; F, \psi) = L^{(C_s(\psi))}(s, \rho_F^{s\psi \otimes^2 \psi})
= \prod_{l|C_0} (1 - \alpha_l^{-1} \sigma_l^{k-1-s}) L^{(C_s(\sigma))}(s-k+1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_{D_a}).
\end{equation}

This settles the case where $D_\sigma = D_\sigma^+$ as $\delta_\sigma = \Delta = 1$.

Here is how to modify the computation for $D_\sigma^-$. We need to compute the Dirichlet series

$$D^-(s) := 2(4\pi)^{-k}(k) \sum_{0 < n \in \mathbb{Z}} a|_{\Delta^-} \psi(n)n^{-k}.$$

Only the Euler factor for a prime $p|\Delta^-$ matters, which are given by

$$\sum_{0 \leq n \in \mathbb{Z}} a_{\alpha^{2n+2}} X^n = \sum_{n=0}^\infty \left( \frac{\alpha^{2n+2} - \beta^{2n+2}}{\alpha - \beta} \right) X^n = \frac{1}{\alpha - \beta} \left[ \sum_{n=0}^\infty \alpha^{2n} X^n - \beta^{2n} \sum_{n=0}^\infty \beta^{2n} X^n \right]
= \frac{1}{\alpha - \beta} \left[ \frac{\alpha^2}{1 - \alpha^2 X} - \frac{\beta^2}{1 - \beta^2 X} \right] = \frac{\alpha + \beta}{(1 - \alpha^2 X)(1 - \beta^2 X)} = \frac{a_p(1 - \alpha \beta X)}{(1 - \alpha^2 X)(1 - \beta^2 X)(1 - \beta^2 X))}

We get if $D_\sigma = D_\sigma^+$, $D^-(s) = 0$ unless $a_p \neq 0$ for all $p|\Delta^-$, and otherwise

\begin{equation}
\zeta^{(C)}(2s + 2 - 2)D(s; F, \psi) = a_{|\Delta^-}^{\delta^-} L^{(C_s(\psi))}(s-k+1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_{D_a}),
\end{equation}

where $a_{\Delta^-} = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } V = D_\sigma^+; \\ a|_{\Delta^-} & \text{if } V = D_\sigma^-.
\end{cases}$

Since $\chi_{D_a} = \chi_E = \left( \frac{F/\sigma}{p} \right)$, all this combined, we obtain
**Theorem 4.7.** Suppose $E_k \cong \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R}$ and that $D$ is indefinite. Let $F$ be a primitive Hecke eigenform in $S^k(C, \psi^{-1} \chi)$, with $F(T(n)) = a_n F$ for the conductor $C|n$ for $M$ as in (4.26) and $f = \theta^*(F)$ be the theta lift holomorphic in $z$ and anti-holomorphic in $w$:

$$f(z, w) = \int_{\Gamma \setminus \mathfrak{H}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; z, w) F(\tau) \eta^{-2}d\xi dq.$$ 

Choose $\phi_\infty$ associated to Dirichlet character $\psi$ of conductor $N = C(\psi)$ as specified above and $\phi_0$ be as in (4.25). Let $\phi = \phi_\infty \otimes \phi_0 \Psi_k$ as a Schwartz–Bruhat function of $D^*_q(C)$. Define the $L_E(k - 2; \mathbb{C})$-valued harmonic form by

$$\omega(F) := f(z, w)(X - zY)^n(X' - \mathfrak{m}Y')^n dz \wedge dw \ (n = k - 2)$$

on the Shimura subvariety $Sh_\delta$ as in (4.22). Then if $f(z, w) \neq 0$, for the mass $m$ as in (4.23),

$$\zeta(2) \int_{Sh_\delta}(m!)^{-2}a_n(\omega(F))|_{Sh_\delta} = mE^\pm(1)\delta^{-k}(-\sqrt{-1})^{k+1}(2\pi)^{-k} \Gamma(k)L(C_\phi(\psi))(1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E),$$

where $E^\pm(1) = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
\prod_{p\mid c}(1 - p^{-2})^{-1} \prod_{c\mid c}(1 - \alpha_p^{-1}\mathfrak{m}_p^{-1}) & \text{if } V = D^*_q, \\
(a_{\pm})_p = \prod_{p\mid c}(1 - p^{-2})^{-1} \prod_{p\mid c}(1 - p^{-1}) \prod_{p\mid c}(1 - \alpha_p^{-1}\mathfrak{m}_p^{-1}) & \text{if } V = D^*_q.
\end{array} \right.$

Here the constant in front of the L-value comes from the constants in Theorem 2.6, (4.17), (4.20) and (4.32). The source and the constant appearing these equations are summarized in the following table whose product in the second row gives rise to the constant:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>(4.17)</th>
<th>(4.20)</th>
<th>(4.32)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>$-2^{-1}\sqrt{-1}$</td>
<td>$(2\sqrt{-1})^k$</td>
<td>$(-1)^k 2(4\pi)^{-k}\delta^{-k}_{\pm}$</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

If $V = D^*_q$, $a_{\pm}$ can vanish killing the entire right-hand-side. The assumption $f(z, w) \neq 0$ implies the matching condition (M) just above Example 2.1. If the converse is true, by the non-vanishing of the adjoint L-values implies $f(z, w) \neq 0$.

**Remark 4.8.** We cannot choose $\phi_0$ with the property that $r(\mathrm{diag}[a, a^{-1}])\phi_0 = \chi(a)\phi_0$ for a non-trivial character $\chi$ as we need $\phi_0(0) \neq 0$ to have non-trivial $E(\phi_0^D)$ (i.e., $r(\mathrm{diag}[1, 1])\phi_0(0) \neq 0$).

Similarly, for the theta function to have Neben character $\psi$, we need to choose $\phi_\infty = \psi$.

**4.11. Fourier expansion of theta descent.** In this subsection, the choice of the Bruhat function $\phi_0(\infty)$ is arbitrary. As remarked in §3.1, we have a canonical surjection $\mathfrak{g}_{D^*_q} : G^*_q \to \text{SO}_{D^*_q}$ for $G^*_q(Q) := \{ \alpha \in D^*_q(N(\alpha)/N(\alpha^*) = 1) \}$ with $\alpha \in G^*_q(D^*_q)$ acting on $D^*_q$ by $v \mapsto \alpha^{-1}v\alpha^*$. Then (4.35)

$$O_{D^*_q} = \text{SO}_{D^*_q} \sqcup \text{SO}_{D^*_q} \sqcup \text{SO}_{D^*_q},$$

for the involution $t$ with $Tr(x) = x + x^t$, and $\text{Ker}(\rho_{D^*_q}) = \mathbb{G}_{m/\mathbb{Q}}$ is embedded into $G^+_q$ to the center of $D^*_q \subset D^*_q$. Note that $D^*_q \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} \mathbb{R} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R}) \times M_2(\mathbb{R})$ by the isomorphism sending $E \ni e \mapsto (e, e^\tau) \in M_2(\mathbb{R}) \times M_2(\mathbb{R})$.

Thus

$$G^*_q(\mathbb{R}) = \{(h_1, h_2) \in \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{R})| \text{det}(h_1)/\text{det}(h_2) = 1\}$$

with $\mathbb{R}^\mathbb{X}$ diagonally embedded onto the center of the product. Then $G^*_q(\mathbb{R})$ has two connected components whose identity component $G^*_q(\mathbb{R})^0$ modulo center is isomorphic to the target of

$$G^*_q(\mathbb{R})^0 \to \text{SO}_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{R}) = (\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}))/\{\pm 1\},$$

where $\{\pm 1\}$ is embedded into $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$ diagonally. We put $\text{SO}^+_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{A}) = \text{SO}_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{A}(\infty))\text{SO}^+_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\text{SO}^+_{D^*_q}(Q) = \text{SO}_{D^*_q}(Q) \cap \text{SO}^+_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{A})$ inside $\text{SO}_{D^*_q}(\mathbb{A})$. Writing $D^*_q \ni \gamma \mapsto \gamma \in M_2(\mathbb{R})$ for the right projection, we let $\gamma \in D^*_q$ with totally positive $N(\gamma)$ act on $\mathfrak{g}^2$ by $z, w \mapsto (\gamma(z), \gamma^\tau(w))$.

Pick a Schwartz–Bruhat function $\phi : D^*_q \to \mathbb{C}$ and assume that $\phi_\infty = \Psi_k(\tau; z, w)$ for $\Psi_k(\tau; z, w)$ as in (4.1). Since we compute the adjoint of the theta lift, we need to have complex conjugation applied to $\Psi_k$. In this subsection, the choice of the finite part $\phi(\infty)$ is arbitrary. Consider Siegel’s theta series and differential form for $n = k - 2$

$$\theta_k(\phi) = \sum_{\tau \in D^*_q} \phi(\tau; z, w) = \sum_{\tau \in D^*_q} \phi(v), \quad \Theta(\phi)(\tau; z, w; x) = \theta_k(\phi)(\tau; z, w)(X - \mathfrak{m}Y)^n(X' - \mathfrak{m}Y')^n dz \wedge dw,$$
where \( x = (X, Y; X', Y') \). This theta series depends on \( D_\sigma \) and hence on \( \sigma \). However the groups \( O_{D_\sigma} \) and \( SO_{D_\sigma} \) do not depend on \( \sigma \) as seen above. Let
\[
\Gamma_\phi := \{ \gamma \in SO^+_D(Q) = G^+_D/Z_{G^+}(Q) | \phi(\infty)(\gamma^{-1} x, y)^\sigma = \phi(x) \text{ for all } x \in D_{\sigma, A}(\infty) \},
\]
where \( SO^+_D(Q) = SO_{D_\sigma}(Q) \cap \text{SO}^+_D(\mathbb{R}). \)

Let \( S^+_{(k,k)}(\Gamma_\phi) \) be the space of quaternionic modular forms \( f : D^\times \setminus D^+_E \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \) of weight \( k + k\sigma \) left invariant under \( \Gamma_\phi \) (writing a fixed infinite place as \( \infty \) and the other by \( \infty \sigma \)) holomorphic in \( z \) and anti-holomorphic in \( \bar{z} \). Pick \( f \in S^+_{(k,k)}(\Gamma_\phi) \) and restrict \( f \) to \( G^+_D(\mathbb{A}) \). We compute the Fourier expansion of the theta descent \( f_0 \), which is given by a finite sum of the period \( P_\alpha = \int_{SH_\alpha} (\eta)^{-\nabla}(\omega(f)) \) for the harmonic differential 2-form \( \omega(f) \) produced from \( f \). Since \( \sigma \in O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}) \), we have \( O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q})/O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) = SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q})/SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \). We extend \( f \) originally defined on \( SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \) to \( O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \) by putting \( f(\sigma x) = f(x) \) for \( x \in SO_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \). Then \( f(\sigma x) = f(\sigma xx) = f(x^\sigma) \), and by this extension, we have
\[
(4.36) \quad \theta_\sigma(f)(g) := \int_{SO^+_{D^\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}))SO^+_{D^\sigma}(\mathbb{A})} \phi(\gamma, g) f(h) d\mu_h := \int_{O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}))O_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A})} \phi(\gamma, g) f(h) d\mu_h.
\]

The Haar measure \( d\mu_h \) satisfies \( \int_{F^r = 1} d\mu_h = 1 \) for the stabilizer \( C_1 \) in \( SO^+_D(\mathbb{R}) \) of \( i := (\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}) \in \mathfrak{h}^2 \), \( d\mu_h = d\mu_{z,w} = y^{-2} dxdy - 2dudv \) writing \( z = x + y\sqrt{-1} \) and \( w = u + v\sqrt{-1} \) and induces the Dirac measure at each point of \( SO^+_D(\mathbb{Q}) \). Plainly this integral vanishes if \( f(x^\sigma) = -f(x) \). In other words, the descent factors through functions symmetric with respect to the action of \( \sigma \).

Pick \( \alpha \in D_\sigma \) with \( N(\alpha) \neq 0 \). Let us look into the action \( \sigma_\alpha \) of \( \text{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q}) \) different from \( \sigma \) on \( D_E \) for \( \alpha \in D_\sigma \). Recall \( D_\alpha = H^0(\text{Gal}(\mathbb{Q}), D_E) \) which is an indefinite quaternion algebra over \( \mathbb{Q} \) with \( D_\alpha \otimes \mathbb{Q} E \cong D_E \). Then \( D_\alpha \) is the even Clifford algebra of \( D_\alpha^\times = \{ x \in \delta_x + D_\alpha | x + x^t = 0 \} \). Write
\[
O_\alpha := O_{D_\alpha, 0} \quad \text{and} \quad SO_\alpha(A) = \{ x \in O_\alpha(A) | \det O_{D_\alpha, 0}(x) = 1 \}.
\]
Then \( SO_\alpha(A) \cong (D_\alpha \otimes A)^\times/A^\times \). Since \( D_\alpha \) is indefinite, we have \( SO_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \cong \text{PGL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \), whose identity connected component is \( SO_\alpha^0(\mathbb{R}) = \text{PGL}_2^\times(\mathbb{R}) \), and
\[
SO_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) = \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \cup \text{SO}^-_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \quad \text{with} \quad SO^-_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) = \text{PGL}_2^+(\mathbb{R}) \text{diag}[1, -1].
\]
Let \( O_\alpha^\times(\mathbb{R}) = \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \cup \text{SO}^-_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \), \( SO^+_\alpha(\mathbb{Q}) = \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{Q}) \cap \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( O^+_\alpha(\mathbb{Q}) = O_\alpha(\mathbb{Q}) \cap O^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R}) \).

Note that the action of \( i \) is scalar multiplication by \( -1 \) on the quadratic space \( D_\alpha^\times, 0 \), which acts on the symmetric space \( \mathfrak{h}^2, 0 \) trivially. Thus, for any point \( (z, w_0) \in \mathfrak{h}^2, 0 \), \( O^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R})(z, w_0) = \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{Q})(z, w_0) \cong \mathfrak{h}^2, 0 \). Let \( \Gamma_\alpha \subseteq \Gamma(\text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{Q})). \) Then \( \Gamma_\alpha \backslash \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R})(z, w_0) \) is a Shimura sub-curve inside the Shimura surface associated to \( SO_{D_\alpha} \sim D^+_E \), whose isomorphism class is independent of \( (z, w_0) \in \mathfrak{h}^2, 0 \). Taking \( (z, w_0) = i := (\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}) \), we write \( SH_\alpha := \Gamma_\alpha \backslash \text{SO}^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R})(i) \).

Pick a cusp form \( f(z, w) \in S^{+\times}_{(k,k)}(\Gamma_\phi) \). Consider the invariant form
\[
(4.37) \quad \omega_{inv} := (z - \bar{z})^{-2}(w - \bar{w})^{-2} dz \wedge d\bar{z} \wedge dw \wedge d\bar{w}.
\]
The measure \( d\omega_{inv} \) associated to \( \omega_{inv} \) satisfies \( d\omega_{inv} = (2\sqrt{-1})^{-2} d\mu_{z,w} = -4^{-1} d\mu_{z,w} \). Then we consider a differential 4-form given by
\[
\Omega_\alpha(f) := [\alpha; z, w]^k \exp(-\pi \eta ||[\alpha; z, w]^k||^2/|\text{Im}(z)\text{Im}(w)|) f(z, w) \omega_{inv}.
\]

We pick \( h_L, h_R \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) so that \( \alpha = h_L^{-1} \delta h_R \) for \( \delta \in \mathbb{R}^\times \). Identify \( (\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}))/\{\pm 1\} = \text{SO}^+_D(\mathbb{R}) \) and put \( h = (h_L, h_R) \in \text{SO}^+_D(\mathbb{R}) \). Then
\[
hah^{-\sigma} = (h_L, h_R)(\alpha, h^{-\sigma}) = (h_L, h^{-1})(\alpha, h^{-1}) = (h_L, h^{-1} \delta, *) = (\delta, \delta^\sigma).
\]

Since \( (hah^{-\sigma})^\sigma = h^\sigma \alpha^h h^{-1} = \pm h^\sigma h^{-1} = \pm (hah^{-\sigma})^{-1} \), we find that \( \ast = \pm \delta = \delta^\sigma \) in the \( \sigma \)-component of \( E^\times \). Thus in \( D_E \), we have \( \alpha = h^{-1} \delta h^\sigma \) writing \( (\delta, \pm \delta) \) as \( \delta \in \mathbb{R} \).
Noting that \(\omega_{inv}\) is invariant under the action of holomorphic automorphisms of \(\mathfrak{H}^2\),

\[
(4.38) \quad \Omega_\alpha(f) = [h^{-1}\delta^\alpha; z, \overline{w}]^k \exp(-\pi \eta \delta h^\alpha) f(z, w) \omega_{inv}
\]

\[h=(h_L, h_R) \quad \delta, \gamma(z, h(\overline{w})) j(h_L, h_R, \overline{w})^k \exp(-\pi \eta \delta h^\alpha h \overline{(h_R(w)))) f(z, w) \omega_{inv}
\]

where \(f[h^{-1}(z, w) = j(h_L, z)^k j(h_R, \overline{w}) f(h_R^{-1}(z), h_R^{-1}(w)). The function \(f[h^{-1}\cdot \text{invariant under } h\Sigma h^{-1}. \)

Recalling \(SO_\alpha = SO_{D_{\alpha,0}},\) we have \(Sh_\alpha = \Gamma_\alpha \backslash SO_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R}) (i) \cong h\Gamma_\alpha h^{-1} SO_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R}) (i) =: Sh^h_\alpha\)

and \(h\Gamma_\alpha h^{-1} \subset D_{\alpha}^2 = GL_2(\mathbb{R}) \xrightarrow{\text{diag}} (D_{E_m})^2 = GL_2(\mathbb{R})^2 \) diagonally embedded. Then

\[
\omega_h^\alpha(f)(z) := \delta^{-2} [\delta; z, \overline{z}]^k f[h^{-1}(z, z) (z - \overline{z})^{-2} d\bar{z} \wedge d\overline{z} [\delta; z, \overline{z}]^k f[h^{-1}(z, z) d\bar{z} \wedge d\overline{z}]
\]

is a closed harmonic 2-form on \(Sh^h_\alpha\), and pulling \([\delta; z, \overline{z}]^k f[h^{-1}(z, z) d\bar{z} \wedge d\overline{z} \) back to \(Sh_\alpha\) by \( h : Sh_\alpha \cong Sh^h_\alpha, \) we define

\[
(4.39) \quad \omega(f)(z, w; x) := f(z, w) (X - Y)^{-2} (X' - \overline{Y'}^{-2} f(z, w) d\bar{z} \wedge d\overline{z}
\]

To introduce an \(SO_{D_{\alpha}}\)-invariant pairing \((\cdot, \cdot) : L_E(n; A) \otimes A L_E(n; A) \rightarrow A,\) we prepare another set of variables \(s := (S, T, S', T')\) as the variable of the right factor \(L_E(n; A) r = L_{id}(n; A) \otimes A L_{\sigma}(n; A) r\)

The variable of the left factor \(L_E(n; A) l\) are denoted by \((X, Y, X', Y')\) as before. We pair \(L_{id}(n; A) l = AX^n + AX^{-n} - Y + \ldots + AY^n\) on the left with \(L_{id}(n; A) r = AS^n + AS^{-n} - T + \ldots + AT^n\) on the right to have the pairing \((\cdot, \cdot)_{id} : L_{id}(n; A) \otimes A L_{id}(n; A) r \rightarrow A\) given by \(\langle P(X, Y; S, T) \rightarrow (n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{id}(P(X, Y; S, T))\), where \(q^\gamma_{id} = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X \partial T} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y \partial S}\).

Similarly, we define \(q^\sigma = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X \partial T} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y \partial S}\) :

\[
L_{\sigma}(n; A) l \otimes A L_{\sigma}(n; A) r \rightarrow A \quad \text{and put} \quad (\cdot, \cdot)_{\sigma} = (n!)^{-2} q^\sigma_{\sigma}.\] Finally we define the desired pairing

\[
(4.40) \quad (\cdot, \cdot) = (\cdot, \cdot)_{id} \otimes (\cdot, \cdot)_{\sigma} : L_E(n; A) \otimes A L_E(n; A) \rightarrow A
\]

by \((P, Q)_{\alpha} = n!^{-2} q^\sigma_{\sigma}(n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{\gamma}(PQ).\) The pairing \((\cdot, \cdot)\) is \(SO_{D_{\alpha}}\)-invariant \([H94, 11.2a, b)).\)

Since \(\pi_{\alpha} = (n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{\gamma} : L_E(n; A) |SO_{\alpha} \rightarrow A\) and \(\pi_{D_{\alpha}} = (n!)^{-2} q^\sigma_{\sigma}(n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{\gamma} : L_E(n; A) \otimes A L_E(n; A) \rightarrow A\) is \(SO_{\alpha}\)-equivariant, we have a commutative diagram up to constants

\[
L_E(n; A)|SO_{\alpha} \otimes A L_E(n; A) \rightarrow A \quad \text{by} \quad (4.41)
\]

Writing the variables of the left (resp. right) factor of \(L_E(n; A)|SO_{\alpha}\) as \(X, Y, X', Y'\) (resp. \(S, T, S', T'\)), we find from \([H99, \text{page 141}]\)

\(\pi_{\alpha}(X^{\alpha-j} Y^{\alpha-j}) = (-1)^j (\alpha_j)^{-1} = \alpha_{\alpha}(S^{\alpha-j} T^{\alpha-j} S'^{\alpha-j} T'^{\alpha-j})\) and

\(\pi_{D_{\alpha}}(X^{\alpha-j} Y^{\alpha-j} S^{\alpha-j} T^{\alpha-j} S'^{\alpha-j} T'^{\alpha-j}) = (\alpha_j)^{-2},\) so the above diagram commutes.

Note that \((n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{\gamma}(\omega(f))\) is given by \(\delta^{2-k}(\alpha; z, \overline{w}) f(z, w) d\bar{z} \wedge d\overline{z} \) \((\alpha = h^{-1}\delta^\alpha\) with \(h \in SO_{D_{\alpha}}(\mathbb{R})\); so, \(\delta = N(\alpha)\),

\[
(n!)^{-2} q^\gamma_{\gamma}(\omega(f)) |SO_{\alpha} = \delta^{2-k}(\omega_{\alpha}^h(f)(z) |SH^h_\alpha)
\]

Then

\[
(\Theta(\phi)(z, w; x), \omega(f)(z, w; s)) = \sum_{\alpha \in D_{\alpha}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \Omega_\alpha(f) e(\pm N(\alpha) \xi).
\]

We are going to compute \(\sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_\alpha / \Gamma_{\alpha}} \int_{SH} \Omega_{\gamma^{-1} \alpha} f(\gamma)\) converting it into an integral over \(\Gamma_{\alpha} \backslash \mathfrak{H}^2\) by averaging.

By the diagonally embedded \(SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \cong SL^2_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R}) \subset SL_2(E_{\mathbb{R}}),\) \(\exp(-\pi \eta \delta h^\alpha \overline{w})\) is invariant under \(SL^2_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R})\). Note \(SL^2_{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R}) \mathfrak{H}^2 \cong SO_2(\mathbb{R}) \mathfrak{H}^2\) whose coordinate on the right is given by \((z, v)\)
Consider the exact sequence of analytic manifolds:

\[(4.43) \quad 1 \to \text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) \to \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})^2 \xrightarrow{\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R})} \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \to 1.\]

Writing \(\text{SO}_2^*(\mathbb{R})\) for the image of \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) in \(\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R})\), we make the quotient of \(\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R})\) by \(\text{SO}_2^*(\mathbb{R})\) from the right. Since \((hLg, hRg) \to g^{-1}hL^{-1}hRg\) under the quotient map, this induces a conjugation by \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) on \(\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})^2 \cong \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\).

We make the right quotient by \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) of \(\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R})\) which produces

\[(4.44) \quad \text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \mathcal{S}^2 = \text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})^2 / \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \cong \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \cong T^+(\mathbb{R}) \cong \mathbb{R}^+_x,\]

where \(T\) is the diagonal torus of \(\text{SL}(2)\) and \(T^+(\mathbb{R})\) is the identity connected component. This is because of the Cartan decomposition \(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) = \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) T^+(\mathbb{R}) \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) for the diagonal torus \(T\) of \(\text{SL}(2)\) [SL2, VII.2], and the isomorphism is induced by \(w \mapsto v = \text{Im}(w) \in \mathbb{R}^+_x\). Thus we obtain

\[(4.45) \quad (\text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) / \text{SO}_2^*(\mathbb{R})) \times \text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) \cong \mathcal{H} \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})^2 \text{ given by } ((g_1, g_2, g_3) \mapsto (g, g), g)\]

Then we have \(h\Gamma_\alpha h^{-1} \delta^2 \cong \mathcal{H} \times \text{SL}_2^*(\mathbb{R}) / \mathcal{H} \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})^2 \cong \mathcal{H} \times \mathbb{R}^+_x\) by sending \((z, w) \to (h \Gamma_\alpha h^{-1} \delta^2, \theta, v) \in \mathcal{H} \times \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \mathbb{R}^+_x\), where \(\mathcal{H}\) is \(\mathcal{H}\) diagonally embedded into \(\delta^2\). Then we can write \(\omega_{inv} = (z - \overline{z})^{-2} dz \wedge d\overline{z} \wedge d\theta \wedge d\varphi\) for a differential form \(d\varphi\) on \(\mathbb{R}^+_x\). We will compute \(d\varphi\) later in the proof of Theorem 4.10. Thus

\[(4.46) \quad h^{-1} \Omega_\alpha(f) = h^{-1} \omega_\alpha(f) \wedge \exp(-\pi \frac{|\delta| \cdot |z, w|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\theta \wedge d\varphi.\]

Define the period of \(\omega(f)\) over \(\mathcal{H}\) as

\[(4.47) \quad P_\alpha(f) = P(f; \alpha, \Gamma_\phi) := \delta^n \int_{\mathcal{H}} \omega_{inv}(f) \wedge \exp(-\pi \frac{|\delta| \cdot |z, w|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\theta \wedge d\varphi,\]

where \(\alpha = h^{-1} \delta h^{-1} \delta h^2 \) for \(h \in \text{SO}_D(\mathbb{R})\). Comparing this definition with (4.15), we find

\[(4.48) \quad P_\delta(\Phi^\alpha(F)) = \delta^n P_\phi^\alpha(\Phi^\alpha(F)),\]

Since \(\mathcal{H} \cong \mathcal{H}_{\tau_+ - \tau_-} \) for \(\gamma \in \Gamma_\phi\) and this isomorphism brings \(\omega_\alpha(f)\) to \(\omega_{\tau_+ - \tau_-}(f)\), \(P_\alpha(f)\) only depends on the class of \(\alpha\) in \(D_a / \Gamma_\phi\).

**Remark 4.9.** To have the non-vanishing period, the locally constant sheaf in which \(\omega(f)\) has values needs to have trivial constant sheaf as a quotient (i.e., \(\nabla^m \omega(f) \neq 0\)), since the projection to any non-constant simple direct factor has vanishing integral. In other words, the Neben character of the theta lift has to be unramified everywhere. This follows from the fact that \(\text{SO}_D = G_1^+ / Z_G^+\) which is embedded into \(G_1^+ / E^+\), and hence the center acts trivially on the theta lift. Thus the theta lift differs from the usual base-change lift (and actually it is the base-change lift twisted by a character to have trivial central character; i.e., this is the central character identity imposed in [H99, §2.4]).

We have the following explicit \(q\)-expansion of the theta descent:

**Theorem 4.10.** Suppose \(\phi_\infty = \overline{\Psi}_k(\tau, z, w)\) for \(\Psi_k(\tau, z, w)\) as in (4.1) and that \(f \in S^+_k(\hat{\Gamma_\phi})\) is a cusp form on \(\text{SO}_D(\mathbb{A})\) of weight \(k > 0\), anti-holomorphic in \(w\) and holomorphic in \(z\) as above. Then

\[
\int_{\Gamma_\phi \backslash \mathcal{H}} \delta^2 = \delta f(\phi(\infty))(\tau, z, w) f(z, w) \omega_{inv} = (8\sqrt{-1})^{-1} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi / \Gamma_\phi \cap N(\alpha) > 0} \phi(\infty)(\alpha) P_\alpha(f) e(N(\alpha) \tau_+),
\]

where \(\tau_+ = \tau\) and \(\tau_- = -\tau\).
By applying complex conjugation to the formula in Theorem 4.10, we get the result for \( \phi \) with 
\[ \phi_\infty = \Psi_k(\tau; z, w) \quad \text{for} \quad \Psi_k(\tau; z, w) \] 
as in (4.1); so, this assumption is harmless.

This theorem is far more explicit than [O77, Theorem 1] and covers general \( D_\sigma \) not treated in [Sh81] II Proposition 5.1 and [H06a] Theorem 3.2. Another paper of Shimura [Sh82, Theorem 2.2] gives a similar result for \( D_0 \) in place of \( D_\sigma \).

**Remark 4.11.** (1) Assume that \( f \) is the theta lift of an elliptic Hecke eigenform \( F \) via the quadratic space \( (D^\pm_{\sigma, \alpha}, \pm N) \) with \( \alpha \in D^\mp_\sigma \) and \( D^\mp_\sigma \). Then \( \alpha = \frac{\xi \xi \sigma}{\xi} \) for \( \xi \in D^\mp_\sigma \) and a scalar \( \delta \in D^\pm_\sigma \) by Lemma 3.2, and \( D_\sigma = \xi D^\pm_{\sigma, \xi} \xi^{-1} \) by Corollary 3.3. Thus \( \text{Sh}_{\alpha} \) with respect to \( \alpha \in D^\pm_\sigma \) is isomorphic to \( \text{Sh}_{\alpha} \sigma_{\alpha} \) for \( \text{Sh}_{\alpha} \sigma_{\alpha} = \text{Sh}_{\delta} \) with respect to \( D^\pm_{\sigma, \delta} \), and if we compute the period with respect to the theta lift for \( D^\pm_{\sigma, \alpha} \), \( P_\alpha(f) \) is the \( L \)-value \( L(1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_\varepsilon) \) times a constant depending on \( \alpha \) as \( \xi \) induces a correspondence between \( \text{Sh}_{\delta, \sigma_{\alpha}} \) and \( \text{Sh}_{\alpha} \). The constant is an adjoint generalization of the mass of Siegel–Shimura. In particular, the vanishing of the eigenvalue for \( T(l) \) for a prime \( l \) only comes from the vanishing of the mass factor, which is an interesting fact.

(2) If this descent map is Hecke equivariant for all Hecke operators (not just for \( T(l) \) at places unramified for \( D^\pm_\sigma \) and \( D_{\sigma, E} \), as expected), the period \( P_\alpha(f) \) would vanish if \( f \) is not the theta lift from \( F \) via the quadratic space \( (D^\pm_{\sigma, \alpha}, \pm N) \) for any choice of \( \beta \in D^\mp_\sigma \). By the seesaw principle (or via Galois representation attached to \( \theta_\sigma(f) \) perhaps assuming that \( E \) is totally real), if \( f \) is a non-base-change lift, the descent \( \theta_\sigma(f) \) vanishes.

(3) If \( \beta \in D_\sigma \) cannot be written as \( \xi \xi \sigma \), it is not clear that the theta lift \( \theta_\beta^\sigma(F) \) of \( F \) with respect to \( D_{\sigma, \beta} \) coincides with the one \( \theta^\sigma(F) \) with respect to \( D_\sigma \). If the two theta lifts are Hecke equivariant for all Hecke operators, by the duality of the Hecke algebra and the space of cusp forms (not a representation theoretic multiplicity one), \( \theta^\sigma(F) \cong \theta_\beta^\sigma(F) \) up to a constant, and further assuming \( \theta^\sigma(F) \neq 0 \), this would imply the period integral formula (and non-vanishing of \( \theta_\beta^\sigma(F) \)) for most of \( \beta \).

We prove the result for \( D^\pm_{\alpha} \) as the proof of the case of \( D^-_{\alpha} \) is almost identical.

**Proof.** Fix \( \alpha \in D^\pm_{\sigma} \). To shorten the formula, we remove \( e(-N(\alpha)\gamma) \) from each term in the sum and put it back at the end. First suppose that \( N(\alpha) > 0 \). Let \( \Phi \) be a fundamental domain for \( \Gamma = \Gamma_{\Phi} \). Then, writing \( \Gamma_{\alpha} := \Gamma \cap SO_\alpha(Q) \),
\[(*) := \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\alpha}} \int \exp(-\frac{\eta}{|\gamma^{-1}\alpha \gamma; z, \overline{w}|^2} |\Gamma(\gamma^{-1}z, \overline{w}|^2) j(\gamma; z, \overline{w})^k \eta(\alpha; \gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(\overline{w})^k) k(z, w) \omega_{\text{inv}} = \int \exp(-\frac{\eta}{|\gamma^{-1}\alpha \gamma; z, \overline{w}|^2} |\Gamma(\gamma^{-1}z, \overline{w}|^2) j(\gamma; z, \overline{w})^k \eta(\alpha; \gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(\overline{w})^k) k(z, w) \omega_{\text{inv}} \]
\[(**):= \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\alpha}} \int \exp(-\frac{\eta}{|\gamma^{-1}\alpha \gamma; z, \overline{w}|^2} |\Gamma(\gamma^{-1}z, \overline{w}|^2) j(\gamma; z, \overline{w})^k \eta(\alpha; \gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(\overline{w})^k) k(z, w) \omega_{\text{inv}} = \int \exp(-\frac{\eta}{|\gamma^{-1}\alpha \gamma; z, \overline{w}|^2} |\Gamma(\gamma^{-1}z, \overline{w}|^2) j(\gamma; z, \overline{w})^k \eta(\alpha; \gamma(z), \gamma^\sigma(\overline{w})^k) k(z, w) \omega_{\text{inv}} \]
is the coefficient of \( e(-N(\alpha)\gamma) \). Here at (1), we made variable change: \( z \mapsto \gamma^{-1}(z) \) and \( w \mapsto \gamma^\sigma(w) \).

Write \( SO_{D_{\alpha}}(R) = SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \cup SO^-_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \) with \( SO^\pm_{D_{\alpha}}(R) = ((\text{SL}_2(R) \times \text{SL}_2(R))/\{\pm 1\})(\epsilon, \epsilon) \) for \( \epsilon = \text{diag}[-1, 1] \). Then \( SO^\pm_{D_{\alpha}}(R^2)/\{\pm 1\} \subseteq \text{SL}_2(R^2)/\{\pm 1\} \subseteq SO_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \). Let \( C = \text{SO}_2(R^2)/\{\pm 1\} \subseteq SO_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \). Then \( C = SO^2_{2}(R^2)/\{\pm 1\} \subseteq \text{PSO}_2(R^2) \). Then
\[ SO_{D_{\alpha}}(R)/C \cong SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R)/C \cong \text{PSO}_2(R^2) \cong \text{SL}_2(R) \]

The component \( SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \) acts on \( \Gamma_{\alpha} \) holomorphically, and \( SO^-_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \) acts anti-holomorphically. In each case, \( C, C^+ \) and \( \text{PSO}_2(R^2) \) are the stabilizer of \( i = (\sqrt{-1}, \sqrt{-1}) \in \Gamma_{\alpha} \).

Now we identify \( \Gamma_{\alpha} \) with \( SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R)(i) \). Choose a fundamental domain \( \Phi_{\alpha} \) of \( SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \) and write the image of \( (z, w) \in \Phi_{\alpha} \) in \( SO^+_{D_{\alpha}}(R) \) as \( (z_0, w_0) \). Then for \( g \in \)
SO\(^+_\alpha(\mathbb{R})\), by (4.4), we have 
\[
\frac{|\alpha(g(z))g^{\ast}\overline{(w)}|^2}{\text{Im}(g(z)) \text{Im}(g^{\ast}(w))} = \frac{|\alpha^{-1}g\overline{\epsilon}(z)\overline{w}|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)} = \frac{|\alpha(z)\overline{w}|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}
\]
and
\[
(4.49) \quad (*) = \eta \int_{\Phi_{\alpha}} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\alpha; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) \int_{\Gamma_{\alpha}\backslash \text{SL}_{\alpha}^+ (\mathbb{R}) \backslash \{z_0, w_0\}} \frac{1}{|\alpha(g(z))g^{\ast}(w)|} f(g(z_0, w_0)) d\varphi_\alpha d\varphi',
\]
where \(d\varphi_\alpha\) is the differential form on \(\Gamma_{\alpha}\backslash \text{SO}_{\alpha}^+(\mathbb{R})\) given by \(h^*((z - 1)^{-2} dz \wedge d\overline{z})\) for \(h\) as in (4.38) and \(d\varphi'\) is a measure associated to an invariant 1-form \(\varphi'\) on \(\text{SO}_{\alpha}^+(\mathbb{R})\) so that \(\omega_{\text{inv}} = \varphi_\alpha \wedge \varphi' \wedge d\theta\). Note that \(\text{SL}_{\alpha}^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2 \cong \text{SL}_{\alpha}^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \sim [0, 1)\). We will make explicit the isomorphism \(i\) and the differential form \(\varphi'\) later.

As explained in (4.38), replacing \(D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \subset D_{\mathbb{E}_8}\) by \(D_{\mathbb{R}} = hD_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}}^{-1} \subset D_{\mathbb{E}_8}\), we may assume that \(\alpha = \delta \in E_{\mathbb{R}}\) (but \(\delta \in E_{\mathbb{R}}\) not necessarily in \(E\)); so, we pretend \(\sigma = \sigma_\alpha\) and \(D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = D_{\mathbb{R}}\). Then we just as notation replace \(S_{\mathbb{R}}\) by \(S_{\mathbb{R}}\). Our \(\delta \in E_{\mathbb{R}}\) satisfies \(\delta^2 = N(\delta) = N(\alpha)\). Since writing \(h\Gamma_{\alpha}^{-1}\) for \(\Gamma\) and \(h\Gamma_{\alpha}^{-1}\) for \(\Gamma_{\alpha}\) all the time is cumbersome, we hereafter assume that \(\delta \in E_{\mathbb{R}}\). By doing this, we do not lose the details and we can simplify a lot the notation. However we do need to conjugate back at the end to \(\alpha\) and remember that \(N(\alpha) = N(\delta)\).

If we choose different \((z_0', w_0') \in \Phi_{\alpha}\), taking a path \(\gamma := [(z_0, w_0), (z_0', w_0')]\) in \(\Phi_{\alpha}\) diffeomorphic to the real interval \([0, 1]\), we find \(\Delta := \{\Gamma_{\beta}\backslash \text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})(z, w)\}\) is isomorphic to \(\Gamma_{\beta}\backslash \text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})\gamma\), and hence its boundary \(\partial \Delta = \Gamma_{\beta}\backslash \text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})(z_0, w_0) - \Gamma_{\beta}\backslash \text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})(z_0, w_0)\). Since \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R}) \cong \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\), we identify \(\text{SO}_2^+(\mathbb{R})(z, w) \cong \delta, \Gamma_{\beta}\backslash \text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})(z, w) = \Gamma_{\beta}\delta\) is a Shimura curve whose isomorphism class is independent of \((z, w)\). Thus we may take \((z_0, w_0) = 1\). Then we have
\[
(*) = \delta^2 P_\delta (f) \eta \times \int_{\text{SO}_{\beta}^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\delta; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\varphi' = \delta^2 P_\delta (f) \eta \times \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\delta; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\varphi'.
\]
We need to compute
\[
\int_{\Phi_{\alpha}} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\delta; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\varphi' = \int_{\text{SL}_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\delta; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\varphi',
\]
where \(\text{SL}_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R})\) is the image of \(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\) embedded diagonally into \(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\). For \(g_{\mathbb{C}} = y^{-1/2} (\frac{y}{1}, 1) \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\) with \(g_{\mathbb{C}}(i) = z\), we have \((g_{\mathbb{C}}, g_{\mathbb{C}})^{-1}(z, w) = (i, g_{\mathbb{C}}^{-1}(w))\). If \((\sqrt{-1}, w)\) and \((\sqrt{-1}, w')\) is equivalent in \(\text{SL}_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2\), then \((\sqrt{-1}, w') = (g(\sqrt{-1}), g(w))\); so, \(g \in \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) and \(w' = g(w)\). Thus \(\text{SL}_\alpha^+(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2 \cong \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2\). As before, write the variable of \(\mathfrak{H}\) on the right-hand-side as \(w\). Consider \(i : w \mapsto \frac{w + \sqrt{1 - w^2}}{\sqrt{1 - w^2}}\) which induces an isomorphism \(\mathfrak{H} \cong \mathfrak{H} := \{z \in \mathbb{C} : |z| < 1\}\) whose inverse is \(\zeta \mapsto \frac{1 + \zeta}{\sqrt{1 - \zeta^2}}\). Since \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\) acts on \(\mathfrak{H}\) by rotation, we find \(\text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H} \cong \text{SO}_2(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H} \cong [0, 1)\). We see \(|\sqrt{-1} - \overline{w}|^2 = 4|1 - \zeta|^{-2}\) and \(w - \overline{w} = 2\sqrt{1 - \frac{1 - \zeta^2}{1 - \zeta}}\). Writing \(\zeta = re^{2\pi i \theta}\) for \(r, \theta \in [0, 1]\), we have \(1 - e^{2\pi i \theta} = 1 - r^2\). Thus
\[
\frac{|i - \overline{w}|^2}{\text{Im}(w)} = \frac{4|1 - \zeta|^{-2}}{|\frac{1 + \zeta}{1 - \zeta}|} = 4(1 - \zeta)^{-1} = 4(1 - r^2)^{-1}.
\]
Since \(i_*((w - \overline{w})^{-2} dw \wedge d\overline{w}) = (1 - \zeta^{-2})^{-2} d\zeta \wedge d\overline{\zeta} = -2\pi \sqrt{1 - (1 - r^2)^{-2}} dr d\theta\), we find
\[
\varphi' = -2\pi \sqrt{1 - (1 - r^2)^{-2}} dr d\theta
\]
and
\[
\int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})\backslash \mathfrak{H}_2} \exp(-\pi \eta \frac{|(\delta; z, \overline{w})|^2}{\text{Im}(z) \text{Im}(w)}) d\varphi' = -2\pi \sqrt{1 - \frac{1 - r^2}{1 - r^2}} \int_0^1 \exp(-8\pi \eta \delta^2 (1 - r^2)^{-1}(1 - r^2)^{-2} rdr.\]

ADJOINT L-VALUE AS A PERIOD INTEGRAL 36
By the isomorphism \( i : \mathfrak{H} \cong \mathbb{D}, \sqrt{-1}, \infty, \sqrt{-1} \cong [0, 1) \) by \( \sqrt{-1}v \mapsto r \) with \( r = \frac{\sqrt{1 - v^2}}{1 + v^2} \). Thus \( dr = 2(v + 1)^{-2}dv \) and \( 1 - r^2 = 4v(v + 1)^{-2} \). Therefore, we can rewrite

\[
-2\pi\sqrt{-1} \int_0^1 \exp(-(8\pi\eta|\delta|^2)(1 - r^2)^{-1})(1 - r^2)^{-2}rdr = -4^{-1}\pi\sqrt{-1}\exp(-4\pi\eta|\delta|^2) \int_1^\infty \exp(-2\pi\eta|\delta|^2(v^2 - 1))v^2 - 1 v^2dv.
\]

Writing \( a = 2\pi\eta|\delta|^2 \) and \( f(v) = \exp(-a(v^2 - v)) \), we have \( f'(v) = -a\frac{v^2 - 1}{v^2}f(v) \). Thus we have

\[
\int_1^\infty \exp(-a(v^2 - v))v^2 - 1 dv = -a^{-1}(f(\infty) - f(1)) = a^{-1}\exp(2a).
\]

This shows

\[
(*) = \delta^2P_\delta(f)\eta \times \int \frac{\exp(-\pi\eta|\delta|^2|\delta; z, \pi|\delta^2|\delta(z)\delta(w))}{\Im(z)\Im(w)}d\mu_{z,w} = (8\sqrt{-1})^{-1}P_\delta(f).
\]

It is well known that if \( f \) is a cusp form, then the image of the theta correspondence is also cusp form; so, the term of \( \alpha \) with \( N(\alpha) \leq 0 \) vanishes (e.g., [Sh82, Lemma 2.1] or [O77, page 108]).

5. Definite \( D \) with \( E \) real

In this section, we assume \( E_R = \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \) and that \( N : D \to \mathbb{Q} \) is positive definite; so, \( D \otimes \mathbb{Q} \mathbb{R} \cong \mathbb{H} \). We follow the notation and the assumption introduced in (D\(^\pm\)) in §3.1. In particular, \( K \) is an imaginary quadratic field \( K \) so that \( D \otimes \mathbb{Q} K \cong M_2(K) \). We choose a maximal order \( R \) of \( D \) so that \( R \otimes \mathbb{O}_K \subset M_2(O_K) \) for the integer ring \( O_K \) of \( K \). We identify \( SO_{D, \sigma} = G^+_{D, \sigma}/Z_G^+_{D, \sigma} \).

Let \( L = KE \) and \( (\sigma) = \text{Gal}(L/E) \) and \( (\sigma) = \text{Gal}(L/K) \). Then \( D_L = D \otimes \mathbb{Q} L = M_2(L) \times M_2(L) \) on which \( \sigma \) interchanges two components of \( \zeta \) acts each component \( M_2(L) \) by \( \zeta \). To distinguish two components, we write \( M_2(L)_{\ell} \) for the left component and \( M_2(L)_{\ell'} \) for the right component. Let \((X, Y)\) be the variable vector on which \( D_L \) acts through the left component \( M_2(L)_{\ell} \) by \((X, Y)\ell = (X, Y)\ell' = (X, Y)\ell) \subset M_2(L)_{\ell} \times M_2(L)_{\ell'} \). Let \((X', Y')\) be the variable vector on which \((X, Y)\ell) \subset M_2(L)_{\ell} \times M_2(L)_{\ell'} \). We write simply \( x = (X, Y; X', Y') \). Set \( [x] = [x]_I = J'(\tilde{x}); [x]_D \).

We will later define \([x]_D \) if \( E \) is imaginary and \( D \) is definite, and if we need to distinguish \([x]_I \) and \([x]_D \), we add subscripts \( I \) and \( D \). Then \((X, Y, X', Y') \) acts on \([x]_I \) by

\[
[x]_I \mapsto J[l'(\tilde{x}); X', Y']l' = J[l'(\tilde{x}); X', Y']l'.
\]

We embed \( D_{\sigma} \subset D_E \) into \( M_2(L)_{\ell} \times M_2(L)_{\ell'} \). Since \( s_{D_{\sigma}} \) is definite, a spherical homogeneous polynomial of degree \( d \) on \( D_{\sigma} \otimes \mathbb{Q} L \) is a linear combination of \( v \mapsto (s(w, v))^m \) for \( w \in D_{\sigma, C} \) with \( N(w) = \pm s(w, v) = 0 \) [HMI, §2.5.2]. Note that

\[
D_{+\mathbb{Q} L} = \{ (\ell, \ell') \in M_2(L)_{\ell} \times M_2(L)_{\ell}, \pm (\ell, \ell') \} \cong M_2(L),
\]

where the last isomorphism is the projection to the left factor. Similarly to (4.2), define, for \( v \in D_{+\sigma, C} \),

\[
[v; x] := Tr_{D_E/E}(v^*x) = Tr_{D_E/E}(v|x) = dyX' + bX'X' - cYY' - aXY' \quad (v = (a b c d)).
\]

Then we define

\[
[v; x]^n = s_v(v^*, [x])^n = Tr_{D_E/E}(v|x)^n = Tr_{D_E/E}(v|x)^n \quad (0 < n \in \mathbb{Z}).
\]

Since \( N([x]) = \text{det}[x] = 0 \), the function \( v \mapsto [v; x]^n \) (for each \( x \)) is a spherical homogeneous in \( X, Y \) and in \( X', Y' \) of degree \( n \) [HMI, §2.5.2]. We simply put \([v; x]^0 = 1 \) for all \( v \).

5.1. Definite theta series. Fix an infinite place \( \infty \) of \( E \) and write its conjugate as \( \infty_\sigma \). Identify \( E_\mathbb{C} = E \otimes \mathbb{C} = \mathbb{C} \times \mathbb{C} \) by \( c \times c \mapsto (c z, c^2z) \). For a subring \( A \subset C \), consider polynomials \( P(x) \in A[[X, Y, X', Y']] \) in \((X, Y) \in E \otimes E_{ij} \mathbb{C}^2 \) and \((X', Y') \in E \otimes E_{ij} \mathbb{C}^2 \). We let \( \gamma \in D_E \) act on \( P(x) \) from the left by \( P(\gamma(x, Y)\gamma); (X', Y') \gamma^2 \gamma^\sigma; \gamma \in D_E \). Then we define

\[
[x]_I = \gamma(x, Y)\gamma; (X', Y') \gamma^2 \gamma^\sigma; \gamma \in D_E \) acts on \([x] \) as above; so, \( [x]_I \gamma = [x]_I \gamma = J[l'(\tilde{x}); X', Y']l' \).
\]

Note for \( g \in GL_2(E_\mathbb{C}) \)

\[
[g^*v^*g^*; x] = Tr_{D_E/E}(g^*v^*g^*; x) = Tr_{D_E/E}(g^*v^*g^*; x) = [v; x] = [v; x^*] = [v; x^*].
\]
with \(xg' = ((X, Y)g', (X', Y')g'')\). Define a Schwartz function \(\Psi_k\) (of weight \(2 \leq k \in \mathbb{Z}\)) by
\[
(5.5) \quad \Psi_k(v) = [v; x]^{n}e(N(v)\tau_+) \in \mathcal{S}(D_{\sigma, \mathbb{R}}^\pm) \quad (n = k - 2),
\]
where \(\tau_+ = \tau\) and \(\tau_- = -\tau\) (the notation \(\tau^\pm = \tau_{\pm}\) is used in §4.3 which is different from \(\tau_{\pm}\)). For a Bruhat function \(\phi(\infty) \in \mathcal{S}(D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C})}^\pm)\), putting \(\phi = \phi(\infty)\Psi_k\) we consider, for \(\tau \in \mathfrak{H}\) and \(h \in G_D^+(\mathbb{A})\)
\[
(5.6) \quad \theta(\phi)(\tau; h) = \theta(\tau; h; x) = \sum_{\alpha \in D_G^+} \phi(-\alpha h^\sigma) = \sum_{\alpha \in D_G^+} \phi(\infty)(h^{-1}\alpha h^\sigma)[h^{-1}\alpha h^\sigma; x]^{n}e(-N(\alpha)\tau_{\pm}).
\]
Since \([\alpha; x] \in L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C})\), we may regard \(\theta(\phi)\) as having values in \(L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C})\).

**Lemma 5.1.** Write \(\tilde{G}_\phi := \{u \in G_D^+(\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C}))|\phi(\infty)(u^{-1}v\sigma) = \phi(\infty)(v) \text{ for all } v \in D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C})}\}\). Then
- (1) \(\theta(\tau; \gamma h) = \theta(\tau; h)\) for \(\gamma \in G_D^+(\mathbb{Q})\),
- (2) \(\theta(\tau; hu) = \theta(\tau; h)\) for all \(u \in \tilde{G}_\phi\),
- (3) For \(z\) in the center \(Z_{G_D^+}(\hat{\mathbb{A}})\) of \(G_D^+(\mathbb{A})\), \(\theta(\tau; zh) = \theta(\tau; h)\),
- (4) For \(u_\infty \in G_D^+(\mathbb{R})\) with \(N(u_\infty) = 1\), \(\theta(\tau; hu_\infty; x) = \theta(\tau; h; xu_\infty^{-1})\).

*Proof.* Since \(\theta\) is the sum of \(\phi(-\alpha h^\sigma)\), we have \((1-3)\). The last assertion follows from \((5.4)\). \(\square\)

To evaluate the integral over \(D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty} \setminus D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty} / D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty}\), we need to project down to the \(D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty}\)-invariant quotient of \(L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C})\). Thus we need to compute \((n!)^{-2}\varphi^n[\alpha; x]^n\). By \((4.1)\), we find, for a scalar \(z \in Z^\pm\),
\[
(5.7) \quad (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n [\alpha; x]^n = (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n [YX' - XY')^n = z^n \sum_{j=0}^{n} (-1)^j \binom{n}{j} (-1)^j \left(\binom{n}{j}\right)^{-1} = z^n(n + 1).
\]

We can choose \(g\) in \(SL_2(\mathbb{C})\) diagonally embedded in \(SL_2(\mathbb{C}(\mathbb{C}))\) by \(g \mapsto (g, g^n)\) so that
\[
[g; x] = [g^{-1}g; x] = [\text{diag}[z, -z]; x] = z(YX' + XY')
\]
for \(z \in \mathbb{C}\) and remark that \([3; x] = [3; xg^{-1}]\). Assuming \(\not\equiv 0\) and \(\neq 0\), by Clebsch–Gordan decomposition \([94, 11.2a,b]\), the action of \(SL_2(\mathbb{C})\) on the space spanned by the right translation of \([3; x]^{n-j}[x; x]^j\) by \(SL_2(\mathbb{C})\) is isomorphic to the \(2j\)-th symmetric tensor representation of \(SL_2(\mathbb{C})\).

Since \((n!)^{-2}\varphi^n P|g = (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n P\) for \(g \in SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \hookrightarrow D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty}\) \([99, page 141]\), we have for any \(0 < j \leq n\)
\[
(5.8) \quad (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n [\alpha; x]^{n-j}[j; x]^j = (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n [3^{n-j}2^j(YX' + XY')^j(YX' - XY')^j - 1].
\]

**5.2. Factoring theta series in the definite case with \(E\) real.** Recall \(\Delta^\pm = 1\) and we assume \(\Delta_{\mathbb{R}} > 0\). Then \(\delta_{\pm} = \sqrt{\Delta_{\mathbb{R}}}\). As described in §3.1, we decompose \(D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty} = Z^\pm \oplus D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty}\) so that \(Z^\pm = \delta_{\pm} \mathbb{Q} \subset D_{\sigma, \hat{\mathbb{A}}}^{\infty}\quad \text{with Q}(x) = x^2\) and \(L_{\mathbb{Z}} = N\mathbb{Z}\mathbb{Z}\). We take the Bruhat function \(\phi(\infty)\) on \(L_{\mathbb{Z}} / L_{\mathbb{Z}} = N^{-1\mathbb{Z}} / \mathbb{N}\mathbb{Z}\) defined in §4.6 for a Dirichlet character \(\psi: \mathbb{Z}/\mathbb{N}\mathbb{Z} \to \mathbb{C}\). We take an Eichler order \(R(\mathbb{N})\) in \(D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C})}\) for \(\mathbb{N}\) prime to the discriminant \(\delta\) of \(D\). Then let \(\phi(\infty) \in \mathcal{S}(D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C})})\) be as in \((4.25)\) for the characteristic function \(\phi(\mathbb{L})\) of \(\mathbb{L} := \delta_{\pm} R(\mathbb{N}) \cap D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}(\mathbb{C})}\). Remark 4.5 applies; so, often in computation, we pretend \(\phi(\infty) = \phi(\mathbb{L})\). We put \(\phi(\infty) = \phi(\mathbb{L}) \otimes \phi(\infty)\) and
\[
(5.9) \quad \phi(x) = \phi(\infty)(x \infty) [x; x]^n e(N(x \infty)\tau_{\pm}).
\]

Decompose \(x = 3 + \eta\) with scalar \(3 \in Z^\pm\) and \(\eta \in D_{0, \mathbb{R}}^{\pm}\). Then \([3; x] = 3(YX' - XY')\) and \([\eta; x] = 3(x; x) + [\eta; x]\). Thus we find
\[
[3 + \eta; x]^n = \sum_{j=0}^{n} \binom{n}{j} 3^j (YX' - XY')^j [\eta; x]^{n-j}.
\]

Defining \(\phi_j^2(\mathbb{L}) = \phi_j^2(3)(\infty)\mathcal{F}_j^2 e(\Delta_{\mathbb{R}} 3^2 \mathbb{R}\tau_{\pm})\) and \(\phi_{D_0} = \phi(\mathbb{L})(\infty)\mathcal{F}_j e(\mathbb{N}(\mathbb{N})\tau_{\pm})\), we have
\[
(5.10) \quad \theta(\phi)|_{O_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbb{A})} = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} (YX' - XY')^j \left(\binom{n}{j}\right) \theta(\phi_j^2(\mathbb{L}) \otimes \phi_{D_0}^{n-j}).
\]
and by \((5.7)\) and \((5.8)\)
\[
(5.11) \quad (n!)^{-2}\varphi^n \theta(\phi)|_{O_{\mathbb{L}}(\mathbb{A})} = \theta((n!)^{-2}\varphi^n \phi_j^2(\mathbb{L}) \otimes \phi_{D_0}^{n-j}).
\]
5.3. Siegel–Weil formula in the real definite case. Note
\[ r_{L}(g \tau)_{L}(g)(y_{j}^{i} e^{(y_{j}^{i})^{2} \sqrt{-1}}) = \eta^{(1+2j)/4} y_{j}^{i} e^{(y_{j}^{i})^{2} \tau_{\pm}} \quad (\tau = \xi + \eta \sqrt{-1} \in \mathcal{H}) \]
and for \( \tau_{\pm} \) as in (5.5),
\[ r_{D_{0}}(g \tau)_{D_{0}}(g)(\eta; x) e(N(\eta_{\infty}) \sqrt{-1})) = \eta^{(3+2j)/4} (\eta; x) e(N(\eta_{\infty}) \tau_{\pm}). \]
Recall \( \theta(\phi^{\pm})(\tau) = \sum_{\alpha_{\infty} \in X} (\mathbf{w}(g \tau) \phi^{\pm})(\alpha) \).
Recall the Haar measure \( d\mu_{g} \) defined above (4.20) and
\[ S_{\Delta} = D \times D_{/} / \theta_{0}^{1}(\Gamma_{\Delta}) D_{/} = SO_{\theta}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SO_{\theta}(A) / \Gamma_{\Delta}C_{\delta} = O_{\theta}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash O_{\theta}(A) / \Gamma_{\Delta}C_{\delta} \]
for \( C_{\delta} = C_{\infty}(O_{\delta}) \) as \( O_{\delta} = SO_{\theta} \cup SO_{\theta}^{-1}. \) We now study
\[ \int_{S_{\Delta}} \theta(\phi)(g) d\mu_{g} = \int_{S_{\Delta}} \theta((n!)^{-2} \nabla^{n} \phi^{\pm}) \theta(\phi_{0}^{D_{0}}) d\mu_{g} = m \theta((n!)^{-2} \nabla^{n} \phi_{0}^{D_{0}}) E(\phi_{0}^{D_{0}}), \]
where \( m \) is as in (4.23) and for \( \Phi \in S(D_{0,A}) \) and for \( g \in Mp(A) \),
\[ E(\Phi) = \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SL_{2}(\mathbb{Q})} |a(\gamma)|^{n-1/2} (\mathbf{w}(\gamma g) \Phi)(0). \]
At the identity (*), the sum \( \sum_{j=0}^{n} \) in (5.10) reduces to the term \( j = n \) because of (5.8) and Lemma 4.4 (see also Remark 4.5).
Take \( F(\tau) = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_{m} e^{-m \tau_{\pm}} \) \( \in S_{k}^{+}(M, \chi_{D_{0}}) \) for \( M \) as in (4.26). Again in the same manner as getting (4.32) from (4.29) and (4.31): for \( \overline{B} := B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A}) / B(\mathbb{Z}) \),
\[ \int_{\overline{B}} F(\tau) \eta^{k/2} \theta((n!)^{-2} \nabla^{n} \phi^{\pm})(g \tau) r(g \tau)(\phi_{0}^{D_{0}})(0) d\mu_{g} = \int_{\overline{B}} F(\tau) \theta((n!)^{-2} \nabla^{n} \phi_{0}^{D_{0}})(g \tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta \]
\[ = \sum_{0 < m \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(m) m^{k-2} \exp(-4\pi|\Delta_{\pm}| m^{2} / n) \eta^{k-2} d\eta \]
\[ = 2\delta_{\pm}^{k-2} |\Delta_{\pm}|^{k-2} \Gamma(k-1) \sum_{0 < m \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(m) a_{m} m^{k-2}. \]
The factor \( (n+1) \) shows up at the end by (5.7), and \( \delta_{\pm}^{k-2} |\Delta_{\pm}|^{k-1-k} = \delta_{\pm}^{k-1}. \) Noting \( (n+1) \Gamma(k-1) = \Gamma(k) \) as \( n+1 = k-1, \) we get in the same manner as in Theorem 4.7.

**Theorem 5.2.** Suppose \( E_{\mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{R} \) and \( D_{k} \cong \mathbb{H} \). Let \( F \) be a primitive form in \( S_{k}^{+}(C, \psi^{-1} \chi_{D_{0}}) \) with the conductor \( C \mid M \) for the level \( M \) as in (4.26) and \( f := \theta^{*}(F) \) be the theta lift:
\[ f(g) = \int_{\Gamma_{\infty} \backslash \mathcal{H}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; g) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta. \]
Choose \( \phi^{(\infty)} \) associated to Dirichlet character \( \psi \) of conductor \( C(\psi) \) as specified above and \( \phi_{0}^{(\infty)} \) as in (4.25). Let \( \phi \) be a Schwartz–Bruhat function of \( D_{k}^{+} \) as in (5.9), and choose the measure \( d\mu_{g} \) on \( O_{\delta}(A) \) as in Theorem 4.2. Then if \( f(g) \neq 0 \), for the mass \( m \) as in (4.23) and \( E^{+}(1) \) as in Theorem 4.7,
\[ \zeta(2) \int_{S_{\Delta}} (n!)^{-2} \nabla^{n} f(g) d\mu_{g} = m E^{+}(1) \delta_{\pm}^{k-2} 2(4\pi)^{-k+1} \Gamma(k-1) L^{(1)}(1, \text{Ad}(F) \otimes \chi_{E}) \]
for the compatible system \( \rho_{F} \) attached to \( F \) and the finite set of points \( S_{\Delta} \) as in (4.22).
5.4. Mass formula and the adjoint L-value formula. Recall from (4.22) that
\[ Sh_0 = O_3(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash O_3(\mathbb{A}) / \Gamma_0 \mathbb{O}_0(\mathbb{R}) \cong D^\times \backslash D^\times_\mathbb{A} / \mathbb{A}_0^\times \hat{R}(N_0)^\times D_0^{18}. \]
Since \( D \) is definite, \( Sh_0 \) is a finite set, and \( d\mu_g \) is the measure given by
\[ \int_{Sh_0} \varphi d\mu_g = \sum_{x \in Sh_0} e_x^{-1} \varphi(x), \]
where \( e_x = |x\hat{R}(N_0)^\times x^{-1} \cap D^\times| \). Thus the measure computes the mass of the quotient \( Sh_0 \) in the sense of [Sh99, page 1]. Then Theorem 5.2 tells us

**Corollary 5.3.** Let the notation and the assumption be as in Theorem 5.2. Then if \( V = D^\times_\sigma \),
\[ \zeta(C)(2)^{-1} 2m(4\pi)^{-k+1} \Gamma(k) L^{(C,\psi)}(1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E) = \sum_{x \in Sh_0} e_x^{-1}(n!)^{-2}(\nabla^n f)(x). \]

A slightly more complicated formula holds also for \( V = D^\times_\sigma \) whose explicit form is left to the reader. The above formula is an adjoint generalization of a mass formula of Siegel–Shimura in (4.23):
\[ N_0[\tilde{R}_0 : R_0] \left[ \prod_{l|N_0} (1 + l^{-1}) \prod_{l \neq 0} 2^{-1}(1 + l^{-1})(1 - l^{-2}) \right] \zeta(2) \pi^x \sum_{x \in Sh_0} e_x^{-1} \text{ for } R_0 = R_0(N_0), \]
and also a generalization of Dirichlet class number formula.

5.5. Fourier expansion of theta descent for \( E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q} \) and definite \( D \). Since the Fourier expansion in the definite case with \( E = \mathbb{Q} \times \mathbb{Q} \) is particularly simple, we insert here its description in the simplest case of the weight \( k = 2 \) (and hence \( n = 0 \)). The general case for a real quadratic field \( E \) will be dealt with in the next subsection. Note in this case, \( D^\times_\sigma \subset (\mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}, \mathbb{R}), \) \( \Gamma_0 \) fits into the following exact sequence:
\[ 1 \rightarrow \text{Gal}(E/\mathbb{Q}) \rightarrow \Gamma_0 \rightarrow \Gamma_a \rightarrow 1, \]
as \( \sigma \in \Gamma_a' \). Thus \( |\Gamma_0'| = |\Gamma_0| = e_a \) and the number \( |\Gamma_a'| \) appears in [Sh99, Introduction] as \( |\Gamma_1 : 1| \); so, in order to resort to the results in [Sh99], we need to use the alternative description \( e_a = |\Gamma_a'| \).

Recalling some results in [H06b, §4], we study the Del–Naganuma lift in this simplest case. Set for a subring \( A \) of \( \mathbb{C} \)
\[ (5.16) \quad S(A) := \{ f : Sh \rightarrow A \mid \sum_{[a] \in Sh} e_a^{-1} f([a]) = 0 \} \]
\[ \quad S_E(A) = \{ f : Sh_E \rightarrow A \mid \sum_{[a],[b] \in Sh} e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} f([a],[b]) = 0 \} = S(A) \otimes_A S(A). \]
(5.17)

We take \( D_0^\times \cong D \) and \( \phi^{(\infty)} \) to be the characteristic function of \( \hat{D}_0^\times \) for \( R_0 = D_0 \) with \( \phi^{(\infty)}(\tau; v) = e(N(v)\tau) = \eta^{-1} r_D(g) \phi(\sqrt{-1}v) \). Thus writing \( \phi_Z^{(\infty)} \) (resp. \( \phi_0^{(\infty)} \)) for the characteristic function of \( \hat{Z} \) (resp. \( \hat{R}_0 \)) and \( \phi_{Z,\infty} \) (resp. \( \phi_{0,\infty} \)) for \( e(x^2) = \eta^{-1} r_Z(g) e(\sqrt{-1}x^2) \) (resp. \( e(N(v)\tau) = \eta^{-3} r_D(g, e(\sqrt{-1}N(v))) \)),
\[ \theta(\phi)(\tau; g) = \theta(\phi_Z)(\tau) \theta(\phi_0)(\tau; g). \]
where \( \theta(\phi_Z)(\tau) = \sum_{n \in \mathbb{Z}} e(n^2 \tau) \) and \( \theta(\phi_0)(\tau; g) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Z}} \mathbf{e}_\alpha g^{-1} \mathbf{e}(N(\alpha)\tau) \). They are holomorphic modular forms of level \([4, \partial]\) (see (4.26)) and of weight \( \frac{1}{2} \) and \( \frac{3}{2} \), respectively. As a function on \( \mathcal{O}_\mathcal{D}(\tilde{A}) \), \( \theta(\phi)(\tau; g) \) is invariant under \( \tilde{R}^\times \) and \( \sigma \) (\( \mathcal{O}_\mathcal{D} = \SO_\mathcal{D} \cup \SO_\mathcal{D} \)). Set

\[
f(h) = \int_{X_{\mathcal{O}(4\partial)}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; h) \widetilde{F}(\tau) \eta^{-2} d\xi d\eta
\]

and for \( e_a = |a\tilde{R}^a a^{-1} \cap D^\times| \),

\[
(5.18) \quad \int_S f(g) dg \sum_{a \in S} e_a^{-1} \int_{X_{\mathcal{O}(4\partial)}} \widetilde{F}(\tau) \theta(\phi_Z)(\tau) \theta(\phi_0(\tau; a)) \eta^{-2} d\xi d\eta = \int_{X_{\mathcal{O}(4\partial)}} \widetilde{F}(\tau) \theta(\phi_Z)(\tau) \sum_{a \in S} e_a^{-1} \theta(\phi_0(\tau; a)) \eta^{-2} d\xi d\eta.
\]

By Siegel–Weil formula, we have \( E(\phi_0)(\tau) = \sum_{a \in \mathbb{Z}} e_a^{-1} \theta(\phi_0(\tau; a)) \) is a Siegel–Weil Eisenstein series on \( \Gamma_0(4\partial) \) of weight \( \frac{3}{2} \). Note that \( \theta(\phi)(\tau; a, b) = \sum_{\xi \in D} \phi(a^{-1} \xi b) e(N(\xi)\tau) = \theta_{a,b} \). Since \( (a^{-1} \xi b)^4 = b^{-1} \xi a \) as \( N(a) = N(b) = 1 \), we have \( \theta_{a,b} = \theta_{b,a} \). Thus

\[
(5.19) \quad f(a, b) = f(b, a).
\]

Hereafter in this section, we assume

(1) \( \frac{1}{6} \in A \).

This condition assures us that \( e_a^{-1} \in A \) for all \( a \in \mathcal{S} \). We have a perfect \( A \)-linear pairings

\[
\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : S(A) \times S(A) \to A
\]

given by \( \langle \phi, \varphi \rangle = \sum_{a \in \mathcal{S}} e_a^{-1} \phi(a) \varphi(a) \).

We have Hecke operators \( T(n) \) acting on \( S(A) \) as follows: Let

\[
T(n) := \{ b \in \tilde{R} | N(b)\tilde{Z} = n\tilde{Z} \}
\]

for a positive integer \( n \). Decompose \( T(n) = \bigsqcup_{\mathfrak{c} \in \mathcal{C}(n)} c\tilde{R}^\times \). Then \( \mathcal{F}|T(n)(a) = \sum_{\mathfrak{c} \in \mathcal{C}(n)} \mathcal{F}(ac) \). The algebra \( H(A) \) is defined to be the \( A \)-subalgebra of \( \text{End}_A(S(A)) \) generated by \( T(n) \) for all positive integers \( n \). For \( \mathcal{F}, \mathcal{G} \in S(A) \), we define \( \mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G} : S_{\mathcal{E}} \to A \) by \( \mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}(a, b) = \mathcal{F}(a)\mathcal{G}(b) \). In this way, \( S_E(A) \cong S(A) \otimes_A S(A) \). Writing the variable \( h \in D^2_{\mathcal{E}} = D^2_{\mathcal{K}} \times D^2_{\mathcal{K}} \) as \( h = (h_L, h_R) \) and \( \tilde{R} := \tilde{R}^\times \times \tilde{R}^\times \), define the theta descent \( \theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}) \) of \( \mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G} \) by

\[
\theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})(\tau) = \int_{S_{\mathcal{E}}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; h) \mathcal{F}(h_L) \mathcal{G}(h_R) d\mu_h = \sum_{(a,b) \in S_{\mathcal{E}}} \mathcal{F}(a)\mathcal{G}(b) e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} \sum_{\xi \in D} \phi(a^{-1} \xi b) e(N(\xi)\tau).
\]

**Theorem 5.4.** Assume \( \frac{1}{6} \in A \). Then we have \( \theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \langle \mathcal{F}|T(n), \mathcal{G} \rangle q^n \in \mathcal{S}_2(\Gamma_0(\partial); A) \).

We get an \( A \)-linear map \( \theta_\ast : S_E(A) \to \mathcal{S}_2(\Gamma_0(\partial); A) \) given by \( \theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \langle \mathcal{F}|T(n), \mathcal{G} \rangle q^n \). Since \( \langle \mathcal{F}|T(n), \mathcal{G} \rangle = \langle \mathcal{F}, \mathcal{G}|T(n) \rangle \), the map \( \theta_\ast \) factors through \( \mathcal{S}(A) \otimes_{H(A)} S(A) \). A main result in [H06b, Theorem 4.1] assuming that \( \partial \) is a prime \( p \) that this induces an \( A \)-linear isomorphism

\[
(5.20) \quad \theta_\ast : S(A) \otimes_{H(A)} S(A) \cong \mathcal{S}_2(\Gamma_0(p); A),
\]

if \( (p-1)(\zeta(2)/\pi^2)^{-1} = 6(p-1) \) is a unit in \( A \). Since the image of \( \theta_\ast \) lands in the space of new forms, for a general composite \( \partial \), the cokernel of \( \theta_\ast \) is large.

**Proof.** By definition,

\[
\theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}) = \int_{S_{\mathcal{E}}} \theta(\phi)(\tau; h) \mathcal{F}(h_L) \mathcal{G}(h_R) d\mu_h
\]

\[
= \sum_{(a,b) \in S_{\mathcal{E}} \times S_{\mathcal{E}}} \mathcal{F}(a)\mathcal{G}(b) e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} \sum_{\xi \in D} \phi(a^{-1} \xi b) = \sum_{(a,b) \in S_{\mathcal{E}} \times S_{\mathcal{E}}} e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} \mathcal{F}(a)\mathcal{G}(b) \theta_{a,b}(\tau),
\]

where \( \theta_{a,b} = \phi(a\mathbf{e}_{\frac{a}{b}}) \) with the characteristic function \( \phi(a\mathbf{e}_{\frac{a}{b}}) \) of \( a\tilde{R}b^{-1} \) and the measure \( d\mu_h \) is chosen so that \( \int_{D^2_{\mathcal{E}} \setminus D^2_{\mathcal{E}}} (a,b) \mathcal{F}(a)\mathcal{G}(b) d\mu_h = e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} \). Since \( \theta_{a,b} \in \mathcal{S}_2(\Gamma_0(\partial), \mathbb{Z}) \) as is well known, we have \( \theta_\ast(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}) \in \mathcal{S}_2(\Gamma_0(\partial); A) \).
For a decomposition $T(n) = \bigcup_{c \in C(n)} c \hat{R}^k$, we have $F[T(n)](x) = \sum_{c \in C(n)} F(xc)$. Writing $ac = \xi h_b u$ for $\xi \in \Gamma \backslash \hat{D}^x / \Gamma_b$, $h_b \in Sh$ and $u \in \hat{R}^x$, $F[T(n)](a) = \sum_c F(h_c)$ and $\xi \in D^x \cap a \hat{R}_b^{-1}$. This shows $\theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})(\tau) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \langle \mathcal{F}[T(n)], \mathcal{G} \rangle e(n\tau)$ as the constant term is given by $\sum_{a,b} e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} F(a) \mathcal{G}(b) = \sum_a e_a^{-1} F(a) \sum_b e_b^{-1} \mathcal{G}(b) = 0$. 

5.6. Hecke equivariance of the theta descent. We prove Hecke equivariance of the theta descent keeping the assumption of §5.5. We first compute 

$$a(n, \theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})|T(p)) = a\left(\frac{n}{p}, \theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})\right) + p^{k-1} a(pm, \theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})),$$

while 

$$\theta_{a,b}|T(p) = a\left(\frac{n}{p}, \theta_{a,b}\right) + pa(pm, \theta_{a,b}) = e_a^{-1} e_b^{-1} \{\{\xi \in a \hat{R}_b^{-1} \cap D, N(\xi) = n/p\}\} + p\{\xi \in a \hat{R}_b^{-1} \cap D, N(\xi) = np\}.$$

**Proposition 5.5.** On $S_k(\Gamma_0(N), \psi)$, we have $T(n)T(m) = \sum_{0<d(l,m,n),(d,N)=1} \psi(d)d^{k-1}T(mn/d^2)$, the same formula is valid on $S(A)$ for $k = 2$ and $N = \partial$, and writing $a(n, f)$ for the $n$-th $q$-expansion coefficient of $f \in S_k(\Gamma_0(N), \psi)$, we have $a(n, f(T(m)) = \sum_{0<d(l,m,n),d|N} \psi(d)d^{k-1}a(nmn/d^2, f)$. 

**Proof.** We have a general formula [IAT, Theorem 3.24, (iv)]

$$T(m)T(n) = \sum_{0<d(l,m,n),(d,N)=1} \psi(d)d^{k-1}T(mn/d^2).$$

This specializes to the formula for $S_k(\Gamma_0(N), \psi)$ as $f|T(d, d) = \psi(d)d^{k-1}f$ if $f \in S_k(\Gamma_0(N), \psi)$. On $S(A)$, we limit the formula to $T(l)$ with $R_l \cong M_2(\mathbb{Z})$, there is no change. If $l|\partial$, as $R_l$ has a sequence of two sided ideal $\varpi^n R_l$ with $\varpi^n R_l/\varpi^{n+1} R_l \cong F_l$ and $N(\varpi) = l$, the formula becomes as indicated. 

By Proposition 5.5, we get 

$$\theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes (\mathcal{G}|T(m))) = \sum_{n>0} \langle \mathcal{F}|T(n), \mathcal{G}|T(m) \rangle q^n = \sum_{n>0} \langle \mathcal{F}[T(n)], \mathcal{G} \rangle q^n = \sum_{n>0} \sum_{d \mid (m,n), d\mid \partial} \langle \mathcal{F}[T(nmn/d^2)], \mathcal{G} \rangle q^n = \theta_*(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})|T(m).$$

Thus we get 

**Corollary 5.6.** Letting $h \in H(A)$ act on $S(A) \otimes_{H(A)} S(A)$ by $(\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G})|h := \mathcal{F} \otimes (\mathcal{G}|h)$, the morphism $\theta_* : S(A) \otimes_{H(A)} S(A) \to S_2(\Gamma_0(\partial); A)$ becomes Hecke equivariant. 

Since $\theta_*(F)(h) = \int_{X_0(\partial)} \theta(\phi)(\tau; h_L, h_R)F(\tau)d\xi d\eta$, by (5.19), we get 

$$\theta(\tau; h_L, h_R)|T(n) = \theta(\tau; h_L, h_R)|T_R(n) = \theta(\tau; h_L, h_R)|T_L(n),$$

where $T_\tau(n)$ (resp. $T_L(n), T_R(n)$) is the elliptic Hecke operator (resp. the left and right quaternionic Hecke operator). 

5.7. Congruence number formula. We find in [EMI, §9.3.1] a congruence number formula via an adjoint L-value for $D = M_2(\mathbb{Q})$. We generalize this to a definite $D$ under the assumption of §5.5. 

Since $H(\mathbb{C})$-module $S(C)$ is semi-simple with multiplicity of each algebra homomorphism $\lambda : H(\mathbb{C}) \to \mathbb{C}$ appearing once and $\theta_* : S(C) \otimes_{H(\mathbb{C})} S(C) \cong S_2^{new}(\Gamma_0(\partial))$ by Eichler and Jacquet–Langlands, choosing a Hecke eigenvector $F_\lambda \in S(\mathbb{Z} [\lambda])$, the Hecke equivariance of Corollary 5.6 tells us that for $F_\lambda := \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(T(n))q^n \in S_2^{new}(\Gamma_0(\partial))$, $\theta^*(F_\lambda) = \Omega_\lambda(F_\lambda \otimes F_\lambda)$ for a constant $\Omega_\lambda \neq 0$. 

Since $\theta_*$ induces an injection $S(A) \otimes_{H(A)} S(A) \to S_2^{new}(\Gamma_0(\partial); A)$ with finite cokernel $C$ by the argument of [H06b] applied to $D$, choosing a Hecke eigenvector $F_\lambda \in A(\mathbb{Z}[\lambda])$ the Hecke equivariance of Corollary 5.6 tells us that for $F_\lambda := \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \lambda(T(n))q^n \in S_2^{new}(\Gamma_0(\partial))$, $\theta_*^{-1}(F_\lambda) = \varepsilon(F_\lambda \otimes F_\lambda)$ for a constant $\varepsilon_\lambda \in A(\mathbb{Z}[\lambda])^\times$. We want to study $\Omega_\lambda$ and $\varepsilon_\lambda$. 


Let
\[ S(A)_{\lambda} = \{ \mathcal{F} \in S(A) | \mathcal{F}(T(n)) = \lambda(T(n)) \mathcal{F} \text{ for all } 0 < n \in \mathbb{Z} \}, \]  
(5.21)  
\[ S(A)^{\lambda} = \{ \mathcal{G} \in S(A)_{\lambda} \otimes \text{Frac}(A) | (\mathcal{G}, S(A)_{\lambda}) \subset A \}. \]

Define \( D \)-congruence module
\[ C_0^D(\lambda; A) := S(A)^{\lambda}/S(A)_{\lambda}. \]
Write \( \mathbb{Z}[\lambda] \) (resp. \( \mathbb{Q}[\lambda] \)) for the subring of \( \mathbb{C} \) generated by \( \lambda(T(n)) \) for all \( 0 < n \in \mathbb{Z} \) over \( \mathbb{Z} \) (resp. \( \mathbb{Q} \)).

**Theorem 5.7.** We have \( |(F_\lambda, F_\lambda)|_p = ||C_0^D(\lambda; \mathbb{Z}[\lambda])||_p \) for all primes \( p \) such that \( S(\mathbb{Z}[\lambda])^{\lambda} \) and \( S(\mathbb{Z}[\lambda])^{\lambda} \) are both \( \mathbb{Z}[\lambda] \)-free, where \( \mathbb{Z}[\lambda]_p \) is the subring of \( \mathbb{Q}_p \) generated by \( \lambda(T(n)) \) for all \( n \) over \( \mathbb{Z}_p \), under the embedding of \( \mathbb{Z}[\lambda] \) into \( \mathbb{Q}_p \) by the place \( p \) of \( \mathbb{Q}[\lambda] \) and \( | \cdot |_p \) is the \( p \)-adic absolute value with \( \|x\|_p = N_{\mathbb{Q}[\lambda]/\mathbb{Q}(p)}^{-1} \) for a prime element \( \varpi \) of the valuation ring of \( p \) in \( \mathbb{Q}[\lambda] \).

The right-hand-side of the formula of Corollary 5.3 applied to \( \theta^*(F_\lambda) \) is exactly \( (F_\lambda, F_\lambda) \), and therefore \( ||C_0^D(\lambda; \mathbb{Z}[\lambda])||_p = |(F_\lambda, F_\lambda)|_p \) gives an expression of the congruence number \( |C_0^D(\lambda; \mathbb{Z}[\lambda])| \) by the adjoint \( L \)-value, generalizing the formula of [EMI, Theorem 9.3.2] for \( D = M_2(\mathbb{Q}) \) to the definite \( D \).

**Proof.** By integration over \( S = \text{SO}_d(\mathbb{Q})/\text{SO}_d(k) \) identifying \( \text{SO}_d = D^\times/Z(D^\times) \) for the center \( Z(D^\times) \) of the algebraic group \( D^\times \), we get \( \int_{\mathbb{Q}} \theta(F_\lambda) d\mu_h = \Omega \sum_{a \in S} e_a^{-1} F_\lambda(a)^2 = \Omega(F_\lambda, F_\lambda) \).

Let \( A = \mathbb{Z}[\lambda]_p \). If \( S(A)_{\lambda} \) is \( A \)-free, it is generated by one element over \( A \), and hence \( S(A)_{\lambda} = \Lambda F_{\lambda} \). If \( S(A)_{\lambda} \) is \( A \)-free, again it is generated by one element, say \( F_{\lambda} \). Then we may assume that \( (F_\lambda, F_\lambda) = 1 \), and hence \( C_0^D(\lambda; A) = A/\Lambda A \) for a given by \( a F_{\lambda} = F_{\lambda} \). Thus \( (F_\lambda, F_\lambda) = (a F_{\lambda}, F_{\lambda}) = a \), and \( |C_0^D(\lambda; A)|_p = |a|_p \). Since \( C_0(\lambda; \mathbb{Z}[\lambda]) \cong C_0^D(\lambda; \mathbb{Z}[\lambda]) \otimes \mathbb{Z}[\lambda]_p \), the desired assertion follows. \( \square \)

Identify \( S(A) \otimes A S(A) = \text{End}_A(S(A)) \) by sending \( \mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G} \) to \( \Phi_{\mathcal{F} \otimes \mathcal{G}} := H \to (H, \mathcal{G}) \mathcal{F} \). Write \( S_2^{\text{reg}}(\Gamma_0(\delta); A) = S_2^{\text{reg}}(\Gamma_0(\delta); \mathbb{Q}) \otimes A[[q]] \). Then defining \( h(A) = A[T(n)n = 1, 2, \ldots] \subset \text{End}(S_2^{\text{reg}}(\Gamma_0(\delta); A)) \), we have a morphism \( H : h(A) \to \text{End}_A(S(A)) \) given by \( H(T(n)) = T(n)|_{\text{S}(A)} \). Since \( S(A) \otimes h(A) S(A) \) is sent to \( \text{End}_{H(A)}(S(A)) \), we may regard \( H : h(A) \to \text{End}_{H(A)}(S(A)) \). Is this a surjective isomorphism? By the solution of Eichler’s basis problem, \( H \) is an isomorphism if \( A \subset \mathbb{C} \) is a field, and in general \( \text{Coker}(H) \) is \( A \)-torsion module.

### 5.8. Fourier expansion of theta descent for definite \( D \) and real \( E \)

In this subsection, the choice of \( \phi(\infty) \) is arbitrary. Recall \( D_{\sigma R} = \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma R}} \cup \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma R}} \) and \( \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma R}} = G_{D_{\sigma R}}^e/Z_G^e \). Note that \( D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}} = D_{E \otimes \mathbb{R}} \mathbb{R} \cong \mathbb{H} \rightarrow \mathbb{H} \) by an isomorphism sending \( E \ni e \rightarrow (e, e^*) \in \mathbb{R} \times \mathbb{R} \). Thus
\[ G_{D_{\sigma R}}^{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R}) = \{(h_1, h_2) \in \mathbb{H} \times \mathbb{H} | \det(h_1)/\det(h_2) = 1 \} \]
and \( \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma R}}(\mathbb{R}) = G_{D_{\sigma R}}^{\mathbb{R}}(\mathbb{R})/\mathbb{R}^\times \)

with \( \mathbb{R}^\times \) diagonally embedded into the center of the product, which is compact and connected. Note that \( D_{\sigma R}^e = \{(h, \pm h^*) | h \in \mathbb{H} \} \subset D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}} \). We identify \( D_{\sigma R} \) with \( \mathbb{H} \) by the left projection. Writing \( D_{E} \ni \gamma \rightleftharpoons \gamma \in \mathbb{H} \) for the left projection and \( \gamma \rightleftharpoons \gamma^\sigma \in \mathbb{H} \) for the right projection, we let \( \gamma \in D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}}^e \) act on \( D_{\sigma R}^e = \mathbb{H} \) by \( h \mapsto \gamma^{-1} h \gamma^\sigma \).

Pick a Schwartz-Bruhat function \( \phi = \phi(\infty) \otimes \phi_\infty : D_{\sigma, A} \to \mathbb{C} \) and assume that
\[ \phi(\infty)(v) = \Psi_k(v) = [v; x]^n e(N(v)\tau_\pm) \in \mathcal{S}(D_{\sigma, \mathbb{R}}^e) \]
as in (5.5). Consider the associated classical theta series \( \theta_k(\phi) = \theta_k(\phi)(\tau; z, w) = \sum_{v \in D_{\sigma}} \phi(v) \).

\[ \Gamma = \Gamma_{\phi} := \{ \gamma \in \text{SO}_{D_{\sigma}}(\mathbb{Q}) = G_{D_{\sigma}}^e/Z_G^e(\mathbb{Q}) | \phi(\infty)(\gamma^{-1} x \gamma^\sigma) = \phi(\infty)(x) \text{ for all } x \in D_{\sigma, A(\infty)} \}. \]

An automorphic form \( f(h; x) : D_{\sigma}^e \times D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}}^e \to L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \) (\( k = n + 2 \)) of weight \( k \infty + k \infty \sigma \) satisfies
\[ f(\gamma x; x) = f(x; xu^{-1}_{\mathbb{R}}) \text{ for } u \in \widehat{D}_{E_{\mathbb{R}}}^e(\mathbb{R}), z \in E_{\mathbb{R}}^e \text{ and } \gamma \in D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}}^e, \]
where \( D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}}^e = \{ \gamma \in (D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}} \otimes \mathbb{A})^e | N(\gamma) = 1 \} \) is an algebraic group over \( \mathbb{Q} \).

To define the theta descent, for any \( E \)-algebra such that \( D_{E_{\mathbb{R}}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{A}) \times M_2(\mathbb{A}) \), we describe \( \text{SL}_2(E_{\mathbb{R}}) \)-invariant self duality of \( L_E(n; A) \). As before \( L(n, 0; A) \) (resp. \( L(0, n; A) \)) is the space
of homogeneous polynomials of degree \( n \in (X,Y) \) (resp. \( (X',Y') \)). Let \( (h,h_\sigma) \in D_E \) act on \( P(X,Y) \in (L(n,0;A)) \) by \( P(X,Y) \mapsto P((X,Y)h_\sigma) = P(h_\sigma(X,Y)) \) (resp. \( P(X,Y) \mapsto Q((X,Y)h_\sigma) = Q|h_\sigma(X,Y)) \). Then \( P(X,Y) \otimes Q(X',Y') \mapsto P(X,Y)Q(X',Y') \) gives a \( D_E \)-equivariant isomorphism \( L(n,0,A) \otimes_A L(n,0,A) \cong L_E(n,A) \).

We prepare another set of variables \( s := (T';S',T) \) for \( L(n,0;A) = A \) and \( L(0,n;A) = A \). Regarding \( L(n,0;A) \oplus_A L(n,0;A) \) is made of polynomials in \( X,Y,S,T \) homogeneous of degree \( n \) in \( X,Y \) and also in \( S,T \), we consider the pairing \( \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_L : L(n,0;A) \otimes_A L(n,0;A) \to A \) given by \( P(X,Y;S,T) \mapsto (n!\cdot)^2\varepsilon^1_P(P(X,Y;S,T)) \), where \( \varepsilon_L = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X^2} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y^2} \). Similarly, we define \( \varepsilon_R = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X^2} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y^2} : L(n,0;A) \otimes_A L(n,0;A) \to A \), and put \( \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_R = (n!)^2\varepsilon^1_R \). Finally we define \( \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : L_E(n;A) \otimes A \to A \) by \( \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle \). We have \( (P,(h,h_\sigma),Q,(h,h_\sigma)) = (N(h),h_\sigma)^n(P,Q) \).

Taking the measure \( d\mu_h \) with \( \int_{\hat{\Gamma}_\phi} d\mu_h = 1 \) on \( SO_D_a(Q) \) and restricting \( f \) in (5.23) to \( G_D^\phi(a) = D_E \), we define the theta descent \( \theta_s(f)(\tau) \) by

\[
\theta_s(f)(\tau) = \int_{\hat{\Gamma}_\phi} \left( \theta(\phi)(\tau;h;x), f(h;s) \right) d\mu_h
\]

for \( Sh_E := SO_D_a(Q) \setminus SO_D_a(A^\infty) \). We now like to show that its Fourier coefficient for \( e(N(\alpha)\tau) \) is given by a finite sum of the period \( P_\alpha(f) = \int_{\hat{\Gamma}_\phi} \theta(\phi)(\tau;h;x), f(h;s) d\mu_h \).

By approximation theorem, we can choose a finite set \( A \subset SO_D_a(A^\infty) \) such that

\[
SO_D_a(A^\infty) = \bigcup_{\alpha \in A} SO_D_a(Q) = \hat{\Gamma}_\phi, \quad so, Sh_E \cong A.
\]

We have

\[
\int_{SO_D_a(Q) \setminus SO_D_a(Q) \cap a\hat{\Gamma}_\phi a^{-1}} = 1/|SO_D_a(Q) \cap a\hat{\Gamma}_\phi a^{-1}| = e_a^{-1}
\]

for \( e_a = |\Gamma_\phi a| \) with \( \Gamma_\phi a := SO_D_a(Q) \cap a\hat{\Gamma}_\phi a^{-1} \), and for \( \tau_\pm \) as in (5.5)

\[
\theta_s(f)(\tau) = \int_{Sh_E} \left( \theta(\phi)(\tau;h;x), f(h;s) \right) d\mu_h = \sum_{\alpha \in A} e_a^{-1} \sum_{\alpha \in D_a} (\phi(a^{-1}\alpha a^\sigma; s)(\tau), f(a;x)) e(N(\alpha)\tau_\pm).
\]

Writing \( \phi_a(v;s) = \phi(a^{-1}va^\sigma; s) \), we have for \( k = n + 2 \)

\[
\theta_s(f)(\tau) = \sum_{\alpha \in A} e_a^{-1} \sum_{\alpha \in D_a} \phi_a(\alpha;x), f(a;s)) e(N(\alpha)\tau_\pm)
\]

\[= \sum_{\alpha \in A} \sum_{\alpha \in D_a/\Gamma_\phi a} \phi(\infty)(a^{-1}\alpha a^\sigma; (a;x)^n, f(a;s)) e(N(\alpha)\tau_\pm).\]

As before \( O_D_a = SO_D_a \cup SO_D_a \) \( \cup SO_D_a a \) and \( \partial D_a(Q) \setminus \partial D_a(a) = SO_D_a(Q) \setminus SO_D_a(a) \). We extend \( f \) originally defined on \( SO_D_a(a) \) to \( SO_D_a(a) \) by putting \( f(\sigma x) = f(x) \) for \( x \in SO_D_a(a) \). Then \( f(\sigma x) = f(\sigma x) = f(x) \), and by this extension, we have

\[
\int_{Sh_E} \theta(\phi)(\tau,h)f(h)d\mu_h = \int_{\partial D_a(Q) \setminus \partial D_a(a)} \theta(\phi)(\tau,h)f(h)d\mu_h.
\]

Consider the embedding \( SO_a \hookrightarrow SO_D \) given by \( SO_a \hookrightarrow Aut(D_0^\alpha,0;0) \) \( \cong Aut(D_0^\alpha,0;0) \) \( \cong G_D^\alpha \hookrightarrow G_D^\alpha \hookrightarrow G_D^\alpha \subset D_E \).

If the image of \( s, s' \in SO_a(a) \) coincides in \( SO_D(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \), we have \( \gamma_s = \gamma_s' \) for \( s, s' \in SO(a) \) with \( \gamma_a, \gamma_a' \in SO_D(a) \). Thus for \( \delta = \gamma^{-1}_a \gamma_a' \), we have \( s = \delta s' \). Applying \( \sigma_a \), we find \( s = \sigma_a \delta s (\delta s)' = 1 \), which implies \( \delta \in SO(a) \). Thus the natural map \( SO_a(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \hookrightarrow SO_D(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \) is injective. More easily, we can show \( SO_a(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \hookrightarrow \Gamma_\phi \) injects into \( SO_D(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \) \( \hookrightarrow \Gamma_\phi \). We let \( SO_D(a) \) act on \( SO_D(a) \setminus SO_D(a) \) \( \hookrightarrow \Gamma_\phi \) by left multiplication. If \( \xi \in SO_D(a) \) fixes the image of \( s \in SO_D(a) \) \( \setminus SO_D(a) \), we find \( \xi_s = \sigma_a \) for \( \gamma_a, \gamma_a' \). Thus \( \xi \in SO_D(a) \cap \xi_s \Gamma_\phi \) which is a finite group and is trivial for all \( s \in SO_D(a) \) if \( \Gamma_\phi \) is
sufficiently small. Indeed, if \( \phi \circ \zeta \neq \phi \) for any root \( 1 \neq \zeta \in SO_{D_o}(Q) \) of unity, \( SO_{D_o}(Q) \cap s\hat{\Gamma}_\phi s^{-1} \) is trivial for all \( s \in SO_{D_o}(A) \). Thus

\[
SO_o(Q) \setminus SO_o(A(\hat{\infty}))/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi \text{ injects into } SO_{D_o}(Q) \setminus SO_{D_o}(A(\hat{\infty}))/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi
\]

if \( \hat{\Gamma}_\phi \) is small enough. We say that \( \hat{\Gamma}_\phi \) is neat if (5.27) holds.

Choose a complete representative set \( S_o \subset SO_o(A(\hat{\infty})) \) for

\[
S_{h_o} := SO_{D_o}(Q) \setminus SO_{D_o}(Q)SO_o(A(\hat{\infty}))/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi
\]

If \( \hat{\Gamma}_\phi \) is neat, \( S_o \cong SO_o(Q) \setminus SO_o(A(\hat{\infty}))/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi \). By adjusting the representative set \( A \), we may assume that \( S_o \subset A \). Then the period of \( f \) over \( S_{h_o} \) is given by

\[
P_o(f) := \int_{S_{h_o}} (\theta(\tau; h; x), f(h; s)) = \sum_{s \in S_o} \phi(\hat{\infty})(s^{-1} \alpha s^\sigma)([\alpha, x]^n, f(s; s)),
\]

which only depends on the class \( \alpha \in D_o/\Gamma_\phi \) and the support of the function \( \alpha \mapsto P_o(f) \) is contained in a lattice of \( D_o \).

We thus obtain, combining (5.25) and (5.28)

**Theorem 5.8.** Suppose that \( f \) is an automorphic form on \( D^\epsilon_{E_h} \) satisfying (5.23). If \( n = 0 \), we further assume that \( \int_{SO_{D_o}(Q) \setminus SO_{D_o}(A(\hat{\infty}))} f(h) d\mu_h = 0 \). Then we have, for \( \tau_{\pm} \) as in (5.5)

\[
\theta_o(f)(\tau) = \sum_{\alpha \in D_o/\Gamma_\phi; N(\alpha) > 0} P_o(f) e(N(\alpha)\tau_{\pm}) \text{ for an arbitrary } \phi(\hat{\infty}).
\]

We now compare \( f(s; s)|_{S_{h_o}} \) and \( ([\alpha, x]^n, f(s; s)) \). Since \( \pi_o := (n!)^{-2} \psi_n : LE(n; A)|_{SO_o} \to A \) and \( \pi_{D_o} := (n!)^{-2} \psi_n \pi_d : LE(n; A) \otimes A LE(n; A) \to A \) is \( SO_o \)-equivariant, we have a commutative diagram up to constants

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
L_E(n; A)|_{SO_o} \otimes_A L_E(n; A)|_{SO_o} & \longrightarrow & L_E(n; A) \otimes_A L_E(n; A) \\
\pi_o \otimes \pi_o & \downarrow & \pi_{D_o} \\
A = A \otimes_A A & = & A.
\end{array}
\]

Writing the variables of the left (resp. right) factor of \( LE(n; A)|_{SO_o} \) as \( X, Y, X', Y' \) (resp. \( S, T, S', T' \)), we find from [H99, page 141] \( \pi_o(X^{n-j}Y^jX'^jY'^{n-j}) = (-1)^j \binom{n}{j}^{-1} \pi_o(S^{n-j}T^jS'^jT'^{n-j}) \) and \( \pi_{D_o}(X^{n-j}Y^jX'^jY'^{n-j}) = \binom{n}{j}^{-2} \), and the above commutative diagram commutes without ambiguity. For \( \delta \in Z^\pm \), we have

\[
([\delta, x]^n, f(s; s)) = \delta^n((YX' - XY')^n, f(s; s))
\]

Since \( YX' - XY' = (X', Y') \wedge (X, Y) \), \( (YX' - XY')^n \) generates a unique sub-factor invariant under \( SO_\delta \). Thus \( ((YX' - XY')^n, (T'S' - T'S)^n) = c \) for a constant \( c \). Since \( \pi_d((YX' - XY')^n) = (n + 1) \) by (5.7), we find \( c = (n + 1)^2 \) from (5.29). Define \( \pi_d(P) = \pi_d(P)(YX' - XY')^n)/(n + 1) \). By the above commutative diagram (5.29), we find \( (\pi_o(P), Q) = (P, \pi_o(Q)) \). Thus we conclude

\[
(\delta^n, f(s; s)) = \delta^n((YX' - XY')^n, f(s; s)) = \delta^n(\pi_d((YX' - XY')^n), f(s; s)) = \delta^n((YX' - XY')^n, \pi_d(f(s; s))) = \delta^n(n + 1)!^{-1} n!^{-1} \psi_n(f(s; s)).
\]

For general \( \alpha \in D_o^\pm \) outside \( Z^\pm \), since \( D_o, R \cong \mathbb{H} \cong D_E \), by Lemma 3.2, we find \( h \in D^\epsilon_{E_h} \) with \( N(h) = 1 \) such that \( \alpha = h^{-1}\delta h^-1 \) for \( \delta \in \mathbb{R} \), and

\[
(\alpha, x)^n, f(s; s)) = ([h^{-1}h\delta x]^n, f(s; s)) = ([\delta, x]^n, f(s; s)) = (\delta^n(n + 1)!^{-1} n!^{-1} \psi_n(f(s; sh^{-1}))).
\]

where the last identity follows \( N(\alpha) = N(h^{-1}\delta h^-1) = \delta^2 \). Thus we find

**Corollary 5.9.** We have the following alternative expression of \( P_o(f) \):

\[
P_o(f) = \sum_{s \in S_o} e_s^{-1} \sum_{\beta \in A^* \Gamma_o} N(\beta)^{n/2} \phi(\hat{\infty})(s^{-1} \beta s^\sigma)(n + 1)!^{-1} n!^{-1} \psi_n(f(s; sh^{-1}))).
\]
where \( h \in D^E_{\mathfrak{g}} \) with \( N(h) = 1 \) such that \( hah^{-1} \in Z^+_R \).

6. General theory for imaginary \( E \)

Hereafter, the field \( E \) is imaginary quadratic. We assume \( K \) as in \((D^\pm)\) in \( \S 3.1 \) to be also imaginary quadratic so that \( D_K \cong M_2(K) \). Recall the maximal order \( R \) of \( D \) with \( R \otimes O_K \subset M_2(O_K) \) for the integer ring \( O_K \) of \( K \). Note that \( D_E \otimes_{\mathbb{Q}} R \cong M_2(\mathbb{C}) \) by an isomorphism sending \( D_E \ni \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ b^* & c \end{pmatrix} \mapsto \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ b^* & c \end{pmatrix} \in M_2(\mathbb{C}) \). Thus \( G^+_D(\mathbb{R}) = \{ h \in GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \mid \det(h) \in \mathbb{R}^x \} \) and \( SO_D(\mathbb{R}) = G^+_D(\mathbb{R})/\mathbb{R}^x \) with \( \mathbb{R}^x \) embedded into the center of the product. Let \( GL_2^+(\mathbb{C}) := \{ g \in GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \mid 0 < \det(g) \in \mathbb{R} \} \). Then \( SO_{D_+}^+(\mathbb{R}) = GL_2^+(\mathbb{C})/\mathbb{R}^x \) is the identity connected component of \( SO_D(\mathbb{R}) \). We identify \( SO_{D_+}^+(\mathbb{R}) \) with \( G^+_D/\mathbb{R}^x \) for the center \( Z_{G^+_D} \) of \( G^+_D \), and we let \( \gamma \in G^+_D \) act on \( D^+_E \) by \( v \mapsto v^{-1} \gamma v \). Then \( SO_{D_+}^+(\mathbb{R}) \) has the identity connected component \( SO_{D_+}^+(\mathbb{R}) \) isomorphic to \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \).

Writing \( x \mapsto \pi \) for complex conjugation on \( C \), the diagonalized regular representation \( \rho : C \hookrightarrow GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) is given by \( \rho(a) = \text{diag}(a, \overline{a}) \). If \( a \in E \), we have \( \rho(a) = \text{diag}(a, a^\sigma) \). Take the real 3-dimensional upper half space

\[ \mathcal{H} := \left\{ z = \left( \frac{x}{y}, \frac{-y}{x} \right) \mid 0 < y \in \mathbb{R}, x \in \mathbb{C} \right\}. \]

As in [H94, (2.2)], we let \( \gamma = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in GL_2^+(\mathbb{C}) \) act on \( \mathcal{H} \) by

\[ \gamma(z) = (\rho(a)z + \rho(b))(\rho(c)z + \rho(d))^{-1}. \]

Since \( \text{PGL}_2(\mathbb{C})/SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \cong GL_2^+(\mathbb{C})/\mathbb{R}^x \cong SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \), we can extend the action of \( GL_2^+(\mathbb{C}) \) to \( GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) making the center to act trivially: in other words, for \( g \in GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \), taking \( g' = \sqrt{- \det(g)}^{-1} g \) and define \( g(z) := g'(z) \). This action of \( g \in GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) outside \( GL_2^+(\mathbb{C}) \) cannot be written as \( (\rho(a)z + \rho(b))(\rho(c)z + \rho(d))^{-1} \) for \( g = \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \). For \( \varepsilon = -J \in \mathcal{H} \), the stabilizer of \( \varepsilon \) in \( GL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) is \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \).

6.1. Cohomological modular forms on \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \). In [H94, §3], we defined the notion of cohomological modular form on \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) for an arithmetic group \( \Gamma \subset SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \). We translate and adelize the notion to \( SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{A}) \) as \( SO^+_D(\mathbb{R}) \) is isomorphic to \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \) via the isomorphism \( G^+_D(\mathbb{R})/\mathbb{R}^x \cong SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{R}) \). The arithmetic subgroup \( \Gamma \) is replaced by an open compact subgroup \( \Gamma \subset SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{A})^{(\infty)} \). A function \( f : SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{A}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \) written as \( f(h; s) \) for the variable \( s = (S, T) \) of \( L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \) called automorphic form of weight \( k + \infty + k + \infty \sigma \) for \( k = n + 2 \) if \( f \) satisfies

\[
\begin{align*}
(\text{M1}) & \quad f(\gamma h u; s) = f(h; s') e^{2\pi i \sigma s'/2} & \text{for } h \in SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{A}), \gamma \in SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{Q}) \text{ and } u \in \Gamma \cdot SO_P(\mathbb{R}), \text{ where } P \text{ is the standard positive maximal of } s_{\pm} \text{ in Lemma 6.1 and } SO_P \text{ is as in (6.5)}; \\
(\text{M2}) & \quad D_v f = \left( \frac{2\pi}{x} + n \right) f \text{ for the Casimir operator } D_v \text{ at each archimedean place } v = \infty, \infty; \\
(\text{M3}) & \quad f|_{SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{R})} \text{ is slowly increasing towards cusps of } \Gamma \text{ if } D_E \cong M_2(E).
\end{align*}
\]

The theta series \( SO_{D_+}(\mathbb{A}) \ni h \mapsto \theta(\tau; h; s) \in \mathbb{C}[s] \) for each \( \tau \) satisfies (M1) and (M3). For an elliptic cusp form \( F \in S_k^+(\Gamma_\tau) \), \( \theta(\phi)(F) = \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{Q})/\text{Mp}(k)} F(g) \theta(\phi)(\tau; h; s) d\mu_{s} \) satisfies (M2) (see [A78] and [F83]).

6.2. Realization of \( D^\pm_{\sigma_\mathbb{C}} \). Note that \( D_{E_C} \cong M_2(\mathbb{C}) \oplus M_2(\mathbb{C}) \). We use the notation introduced in \( \S 3.1 \) in Cases II and I. In Case II, identifying \( D_R = M_2(\mathbb{R}) \) and \( D_C = M_2(\mathbb{C}) \), we have \( D_R = H^0(\sigma_1, D_C) \) for \( \sigma_1 \) as in (II) in \( \S 3.1 \). In Case I, identifying \( D_R = \mathbb{H} \) and \( D_C = M_2(\mathbb{C}) \), we have \( D_R = H^0(\sigma_1, D_C) \) for \( \sigma_1 \) as in (I) in \( \S 3.1 \).

Note

\[
D^\pm_{\sigma_\mathbb{C}} = \begin{cases} 
\{(x, \pm x') | x \in M_2(\mathbb{C})\} & \text{if } \sigma = \sigma_1 \text{ (i.e., in case II)}, \\
\{(x, \pm^t x) | x \in M_2(\mathbb{C})\} & \text{if } \sigma = \sigma_J \text{ (i.e., in case I)}.
\end{cases}
\]

since \( Jx^t J^{-1} = x \). We have an embedding \( D_{\sigma, \mathbb{R}} \hookrightarrow D_{\sigma, \mathbb{C}} \) given by

\[
\begin{align*}
x & \mapsto (x, \pi) \quad \text{in Case II with } \sigma = \sigma_1, \\
x & \mapsto (x, Jx^t J^{-1}) \quad \text{in Case I with } \sigma = \sigma_J.
\end{align*}
\]
Consider \( x := (X, Y; X', Y') \in (E \otimes \mathbb{Q})^2 = \mathbb{C}^2 \oplus \mathbb{C}^2 \), and define
\[
[x]_D := \left[ \frac{x}{\sqrt{2}} \right] \text{ and } [x]_I := J \left[ \frac{x}{\sqrt{2}} \right].
\]
When the case we are working is clear in the context, we just write \([x]\) for \([x]_I\) or \([x]_D\). Then the action of \( G^\pm_{D_n}(\mathbb{C}) = \{(g, h) \in \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \mid \det(g) = \det(h)\} \) on \( M_2(\mathbb{C}) \) is different in the following way:
\[
\begin{align*}
&x \mapsto (g, h)x(g, h)^{\sigma_1} = gh^t & \text{in Case II with } \sigma = \sigma_1, \\
&x \mapsto (g, h)x(g, h)^{\sigma_J} = gh^t & \text{in Case ID with } \sigma = \sigma_J.
\end{align*}
\]

Lemma 6.1. Let the notation be as above. Then
\[
\begin{align*}
&\text{Case ID. By the isomorphism } s \mapsto \sigma \text{ we need to show } x \mapsto \sigma(x), \\
&\text{the case } (6.4) \text{ induces an isomorphism } D_{\sigma_1}^+ \to D_{\sigma_1}^+.
\end{align*}
\]
We then have for \( g \in G_{D_n}^+(\mathbb{R}) \)
\[
[v; x] = \begin{cases} 
 Tr_{D_E/E}(v; [x]) = dYX' + bXX' - cYY' - aXY' & \text{in Case II with } \sigma = \sigma_1, \\
 Tr_{D_E/E}(v; [x]) = dXX' - bYY' - cXY' + aXY' & \text{in Case ID with } \sigma = \sigma_J.
\end{cases}
\]

The first formula for \( v = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in D_{\sigma_1}^+ \) in Case ID by
\[
(6.1)
\begin{align*}
&[v; x] = Tr_{D_E/E}(v; [x]) = dYX' + bXX' - cYY' - aXY' & \text{in Case II with } \sigma = \sigma_1, \\
&[v; x] = Tr_{D_E/E}(v; [x]) = dXX' - bYY' - cXY' + aXY' & \text{in Case ID with } \sigma = \sigma_J.
\end{align*}
\]
We define a standard positive majorant \( P_1 \) of \( s_\pm \) in Case ID by
\[
(6.3) \quad P(x, y) = P_{D}(x, y) = \text{Tr}_{D_E/E}(xJy^*J^{-1}) = \text{Tr}_{D_E/E}(xy^*)
\]
for \( y = \sqrt{2} \). If \( x \in D_{\sigma_1, A}^+ \) and \( J \in D_{E_A} \cap D_{E_c} \) for a finite extension \( A/\mathbb{Q} \subset \mathbb{C} \), then
\[
(Jx)^t = -(xJ)^{\sigma_1} = -(xJ)^{\sigma_1} = -(xJ)^{\sigma_1}.
\]
Thus \( x \mapsto Jx \) induces an isomorphism \( D_{\sigma_1, A}^+ \to D_{\sigma_1, A}^+ \). In particular, this isomorphism sends \([x]_D \in D_{\sigma_1, C} \) to \([x]_I \in D_{\sigma_1, C} \). Define the standard positive majorant in Case II by
\[
(6.4) \quad P(x, y) = P_1(x, y) = P_{D}(Jx, Jy) = \text{Tr}_{D_E/E}(xy^*) \text{ in Case II.}
\]

Lemma 6.1. Let the notation be as above. Then \( P \) defined as above is a positive majorant of \( s_\pm \) and \( v \mapsto [v; x]^{n+1} \) is a spherical harmonic polynomial for the standard positive majorant \( P \). Moreover the stabilizer of \( P \) in \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) is \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \).

Proof. Recall \( s(x, y) = s_\pm(x, y) = Tr_{D_E/E}(xx^t) = \pm Tr_{D_E/E}(xx^t) \). As for \( P \) being a positive majorant, we only need to prove this for \( s = s_+ \) and \( \sigma = \sigma_J \) (i.e., in Case ID). We have \( s(x, y) = Tr_{D_E/E}(xJyJ^{-1}) \) over \( D_{\sigma, A} \). On \( Z_R \), \( s = P \) and on \( D_{0, R} \), \( 0 \leq P(x, y) = Tr_{D_E/E}(xJyJ^{-1}) = -Tr_{D_E/E}(xJyJ^{-1}) = -(s(x, y)) \), which shows that \( P \) is a positive majorant in Case ID. Since \( P(x, y) = \text{Tr}_{D_E/E}(xy^*) \), its stabilizer in \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) is \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \) by definition. Since \( J \in SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \), \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \) is also the stabilizer of \( P_1 \).

Now we prove that \( [v; x]^{n+1} \) is a spherical harmonic polynomial. Since \( N([x]) = \det([x]) = 0 \), we need to show \( s_\pm(v; [x]) = \pm P(v, [x]) \) [HMI, page 143]. This follows from the above computation in Case ID. By the isomorphism \( J : D_{\sigma_1, A}^+ \to D_{\sigma_1, A}^+ \), this also shows the result in Case II. \( \square \)

Define \( g_z = y^{-1/2} \left( \begin{smallmatrix} y & -z \\ 0 & y^{-1} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) for \( z = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} y & 0 \\ 0 & y^{-1} \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in H \). Then \( g_z(\varepsilon) = \varepsilon \).

Corollary 6.2. Let \( P_2(x, y) = P_2(g_z^{-1}xg_z, g_z^{-1}yg_z^{-1}) \), which is a positive majorant associated to \( z \in H \). Then if \( g(\varepsilon) = z \), the polynomial \( v \mapsto [g^{-1}vg^*; x]^{n+1} \) is spherical harmonic with respect to \( P_2 \).
Let
\[ \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) := \{ u \in \text{SO}_{D^+}(\mathbb{R}) | P[u^{-1}vu^*] = P[v] \text{ for all } v \in D^+_{\sigma,\mathbb{R}} \}. \]
If \( u \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) (i.e., \( u^t u = 1 \leftrightarrow u = u^\sigma = u^{\sigma^*} \)),
\[ P(u^{-1}vu^*, u^{-1}vu^*) = \text{Tr}_{D_E/E}(u^{-1}vu^*(u^{-1}vu^*)^*) \] is the strong approximation theorem for \( \text{SO}_P(\tilde{\mathbb{G}}) \) on \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})/\{ \pm 1 \} \) and \( \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) = J \cdot \text{SO}_{P,1}(\mathbb{R}) J^{-1} = \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})/\{ \pm 1 \} \) as \( J \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \).

By Lemma 6.1, the function \( v \mapsto |v; x|^{n+1} \) is a spherical harmonic polynomial on \( D_{\sigma,C} \) of homogeneous degree \( n + 1 \). Write \( H_\phi \) for the space of spherical harmonics of homogeneous degree \( n + 1 \) on \( D_\sigma \) and homogeneous of degree \( n + 1 \) in \((X, Y)\) and \((X', Y')\). We have \( \dim_{\mathbb{C}} H_n = 2n + 3 \) (in \([A78, \text{Lemma } 2]\), this space is denoted \( H_{n+1} \)).

By (6.2), as a function of \( v \in D_\sigma \) and \( x = (X, Y; X', Y') \), \(|v; x|^{n+1}\) intertwines the representation of \( \text{SO}_{D_\sigma} \) on the space of spherical harmonics of degree \( n + 1 \) with the symmetric \((n + 1)\)-th power representation of \( g \mapsto g \otimes g^\sigma \). On the maximal compact subgroup \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})/\{ \pm 1 \} = \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) \subset \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) \), \( g \mapsto g^\sigma \) is equivalent to the standard representation. Thus, on \( L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \), the action of \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) is equivalent to the symmetric \((n + 1)\)-th power representation of \( g \mapsto g \otimes g^\sigma \) which contains the symmetric \( n^* \)-power \( g \mapsto g \otimes g^\sigma \) for \( n^* = 2n + 2 \) with multiplicity one ([H94, (11.2a)]). On the other hand, as seen in \([A78, \text{Lemma } 2]\), on the space \( H_\sigma \) of spherical functions of degree \( n + 1 \), \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) acts by the symmetric \( n^* \)-th tensor representation irreducibly.

### 6.3. Locally constant sheaves on \( \Gamma_\phi \backslash \mathcal{H} \).

Recall \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) = \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R}) = G^+_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R})/Z(G^+_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R})) \).

Let \( M \) be a discrete left \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-module. Regard \( M \) as a right \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-module by \( m \mapsto g^{-1} m \), and write \( ^t M \) for the right \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-module \( M \). Write \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) for the image of \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) in \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \).

We construct on the automorphic manifold \( S := \Gamma_\phi \backslash \mathcal{H} \) a covering space in the following two ways:

(A) \( \tilde{M} := \Gamma_\phi \backslash (\mathcal{H} \times M) \) via the action \( \varphi(z, m) = (\varphi(z), \varphi(m)) \) for \( \varphi \in \Gamma_\phi \) and \( z \in \mathcal{H} \);

(B) \( M^* := (\Gamma_\phi \backslash \mathcal{H}(\mathbb{C}) \times \mathsf{I} M)/\text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) via the action \( \varphi(g, m)u = (\varphi g u, mu) \) (\( u \in \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \), \( \varphi \in \Gamma_\phi \)) regarding \( ^t M \) as a right \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-module.

We use the symbol \( S \) for \( \Gamma_\phi \backslash \mathcal{H} \) (not \( S_h \)) as it is not an algebraic variety (so, not a Shimura variety). The covering spaces are étale over \( S \) if \( \Gamma_\phi \cap g \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) g^{-1} = \{1\} \) for all \( g \in \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \). The definition (B) as above works well for any right \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-module \( X \). However \( X^* \) may not have a matching \( \tilde{X} \) (i.e., \( X \) may not have compatible left action of \( \Gamma_\phi \) without enlarging \( X \)). In this way, we can construct the sheaf \( L^*(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \) on \( S \) for the \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-module \( L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \). Here is an archimedean version of [H88, Proposition 6.1].

**Proposition 6.3.** Let \( M \) be a discrete left \( \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-module. We have a canonical isomorphism of covering spaces \( M^* \cong \tilde{M} \) induced by \( (g, m) \mapsto (g(z), gm) \) for \( g \in \text{PSL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \), whose converse is given by \( (z, m) \mapsto (g(z), mg_{-1} m) \).

**Proof.** Define a map \( i : SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \times \mathsf{I} M \to \mathcal{H} \times M \) by \( (g, m) \mapsto (g(z), gm) \) as above. Then for \( \varphi \in \Gamma_\phi \) and \( u \in \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \),
\[
i(gu, mu) = (g(z), gu_{-1} m) = (g(z), gm) \quad \text{and} \quad i(\varphi g, m) = (\varphi(g(z)), \varphi g m) \sim (g(z), gm) \quad \text{in} \quad \tilde{M}.\]

Thus \( i \) induces a morphism of covering spaces \( i : M^* \to \tilde{M} \). Since this is an isomorphism on the fiber at \( g \) if \( \varphi(g(z)) = g(z) \) for \( \Gamma_\phi \) implies \( \varphi = 1 \), we conclude the isomorphism of the fiber \( M^* \) at \( g \) for \( \varphi \) induces \( \varphi \) for the same fiber for \( \varphi \Gamma_\phi \). Suppose the stabilizer \( \Gamma_{g(z)}(\mathbb{R}) \) in \( \Gamma_\phi \) of \( g(z) \) is non-trivial. For \( 1 \neq \varphi \in \Gamma_{g(z)}(\mathbb{R}) \), \( (g(z), gm) = (\varphi,gm) = (g(z), \varphi g m) \) in \( \tilde{M} \).\( \varphi \) implies \( m \in H^0(g^{-1} \varphi g, M) \) of \( M \).

Thus \( M^* \cong M^* g(z) \) is a \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-module. Then \( M^* \) is a \( \text{PSU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-module. Hence \( M^* \) induces an isomorphism fiber by fiber, as desired.

We adelize the construction as follows: Write \( S_{\mathbb{A}} := \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A})/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi B^+ \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) \) adelicly for the closure \( \hat{\Gamma}_\phi \in \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}(\mathbb{A}(\infty))) \). Then we define an adelicized covering space:

\[ (B_{\mathbb{A}}) \quad M^\omega_{\mathbb{A}} := (S_{\mathbb{A}} \times \mathsf{I} M)/\hat{\Gamma}_\phi B^+ \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) \] through the action \( \varphi(g, m)u = (\varphi g, m u_{\infty}) \) for \( u \in \hat{\Gamma}_\phi \text{SO}_P(\mathbb{R}) \). By the strong approximation theorem for \( \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \), we have \( S_{\mathbb{A}} = S \), and by [H88, Proposition 6.1],
Corollary 6.4. We have a canonical isomorphism $M_L^* \cong M^* \cong \widetilde{M}$ induced by the projection to the $\infty$-component.

Remark 6.5. If the covering space is étale, it defines a locally constant sheaf which we denote by the same symbol $X_{/\mathcal{S}} = M_L^* = M^* = M$; so, we have a well-defined sheaf cohomology $H^*(S, X)$. Even if the covering space is not étale, we have a normal subgroup of finite index $\Gamma \subset \Gamma_\mathcal{S}$ such that the covering is étale over $S' = \Gamma \backslash \mathcal{S}$. Thus we can define the cohomology group $H^*(S, X_{/\mathcal{S}}) := H^*(S', X_{/\mathcal{S}})^{\Gamma_\mathcal{S}}$, which is well defined as long as the multiplication by $|\Gamma_\mathcal{S}|/|\Gamma|$ is invertible on $X$. In this sense, we pretend that $X$ is étale over $\mathcal{S}$ (assuming to have a choice of $\Gamma$ with $|\Gamma_\mathcal{S}|/|\Gamma|$ invertible on coefficients).

6.4. Vector valued theta series for imaginary $E$. Define for the majorant $P$ in Lemma 6.1

$$\Psi_k(v; \tau) = \eta^{1/2}[v; x]^{n+1} e(\pm N(v)\xi + \eta P[v]/2) \in S(D_{x,\mathbb{R}}^+) \quad (n = k - 2, \tau \in \mathfrak{H}, v \in D_{x})$$

We have $\eta^{1/2}$ in front to adjust the metaplectic weight to be $k$ (e.g., [HMI, Theorem 2.65]). Here, for $u \in SU_2(\mathbb{R}) = SO_P(\mathbb{R}) \subset SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{R})$ and $g \in SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{R})$, the coefficient polynomial satisfies

$$g' \to \eta^{-1} g^{-1} g' u^\ast; x|^{n+1} = |g^{-1} g' x u^\ast|^{n+1},$$

where $u^\ast = u^{-1}$ or $u$ according to whether in Case II ($\sigma = \sigma_1$) or in Case ID ($\sigma = \sigma_2$).

For $\phi(\infty) \in S(D_{x,\mathbb{A}}^{\infty})$, putting $\phi = \phi(\infty) \Psi_k$ we consider, for $\tau \in \mathfrak{H}$ and $g \in SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{A})$

$$\theta(\phi)(\tau; g; x) = \sum_{\alpha} \phi(u^{-1} g^{-1} g' u^\ast)$$

where $u^{-1} g^{-1} g' u^\ast$ indicates the action of $SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \subset SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{A})$ as in (6.7) and $g \in SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{A})$.

$$\theta(\phi)(\tau; gu; x) = \sum_{\alpha} \phi(g^{-1} g' u^\ast; x)$$

Since $[\alpha; x] \in L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ ($n^* = 2n + 2$) for the $SU_2(\mathbb{R})$-module $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$, we may regard $\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x)$ has values in $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ with $\theta(\phi)(gu; x) = \theta(\phi)(\mu; u; x)$ writing the action of $SU_2(\mathbb{R})$ on $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ as $\phi_n^\ast$. As seen in [A78, §2], base change image using $\theta(\phi)$ as the kernel function is an eigenfunction of the Casimir operator with eigenvalue equal to that of $L_{\mathfrak{H}}(n; \mathbb{C})$ (cf. [H94, §2.3]).

For $\gamma \in G_{D_x}(\mathbb{Q})/Z_{G_{D_x}}(\mathbb{Q}) = SO_{D_x}(\mathbb{Q})$, we have

$$\theta(\phi)(\tau; \gamma g; x) = \sum_{\alpha} \phi(g^{-1} \gamma^{-1} \alpha \gamma g' \gamma^\circ)$$

Let $h^2 = h^t$ in Case II and $h$ in Case ID for $h \in G_{D_{/\mathcal{S}}}^+(\mathbb{A})$. Define

$$\theta(\tau; z; x) = \theta(\tau; gz; xg^{-1}; x) = \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha} \phi(\infty)(\alpha)[\alpha; x g^{-1}]^{n+1} e(\pm N(\alpha)\xi + \eta P[g^{-1} \alpha g]^{2}/2) \sqrt{-1},$$
This definition could be given by choosing any $g_{\infty}$ with $g_{\infty}(\varepsilon) = z$ in place of $g_{z}$, as $P[g_{z}^{-1} \alpha g_{z}'] = P[u^{-1} g_{z}^{-1} \alpha g_{z}']$ for any $u \in SU_{2}(\mathbb{R})$. We can check for any $\gamma \in \Gamma_{\phi}$,

$$\theta(\tau; \gamma(z); x) = \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_{\tilde{x}}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha)[\alpha; x g_{\gamma}^{-1}(z)]^{n+1} \epsilon(\pm N(\alpha) \xi + \frac{\eta P[g_{\gamma}^{-1} \alpha g_{\gamma}']}{2} \sqrt{-1})$$

$$= \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_{\tilde{x}}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha)[\alpha; x g_{\gamma}^{-1}(z)]^{n+1} \epsilon(\pm N(\alpha) \xi + \frac{\eta P[g_{\gamma}^{-1} \alpha g_{\gamma}']}{2} \sqrt{-1})$$

The last equality of (6.12) follows from (7.9) and (7.10). By Corollary 6.4 and the invariance in (6.12), $\theta(\phi)(\tau; z; x)$ is a global section of $L_{E}(n+1; \mathbb{C})$ over $S$ and by the invariance of (6.9), $\theta(\phi)(\tau; g; x)$ is the equivalent global section of $L_{E}(n+1; \mathbb{C})$ over $S$.

6.5. Explicit form down to earth of Schwartz functions. By Lemma 3.2, there are two isomorphism classes of the action on $D_{E_{n}}$ of $Gal(E/Q)$ over $\mathbb{R}$ and hence on $D_{E_{n}}$ such that $H^{0}(\langle \sigma_{n} \rangle, D_{E_{n}}) \cong M_{2}(\mathbb{R})$ and $H^{0}(\langle \sigma_{j} \rangle, D_{E_{n}}) = \mathbb{H}$. For $z = (x, y) \in \mathcal{H}$, we put $g_{z} = y^{-1/2}(y \frac{x}{1}) \in \mathcal{H}$; so, $g_{z}(x) = z$.

We first deal with Case ID where $\sigma = \sigma_{j}$; so, $D_{R} \cong \mathbb{H}$.

As a subspace of $M_{2}(\mathbb{C})$, we have

$$D_{\sigma}^{\pm} = D_{\sigma, R}^{\pm} = \left\{ \left( \frac{u}{w}, \frac{v}{w} \right) \mid u, t \in \mathbb{R} \text{ and } w \in \mathbb{C} \right\}$$

Let $p_{\pm}(z) := yg_{z}^{-1}g_{z}'$ and $p_{\pm}(z) := \sqrt{-1}p(z) \in D_{\sigma}$ with $s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] > 0$. Let $D_{\sigma}^{\pm} = \mathbb{R}p_{\pm}(z) \oplus (\mathbb{R}p_{\pm}(z))^{\perp}$, and write $V_{z} := (\mathbb{R}p_{\pm}(z))^{\perp}$ on which $\pm s_{\pm}$ is positive definite. For $h \in G_{\sigma}^{+}(\mathbb{R}) \subset GL_{2}(\mathbb{C})$, $h g_{z} = h_{\bar{z}}u$ for $u \in \mathbb{H}^{\times}$ with $N(u) = N(h) \in \mathbb{R}^{\times}$. Thus $h^{-1}p_{\pm}(z)h_{\sigma} = h^{-1}y^{-1}g_{\bar{z}}^{1}g_{z}'h_{\sigma} = u^{-1}y(h(z))h_{\bar{z}}g_{\bar{z}}^{1} = u^{-1}p_{\pm}(h(z))h_{\sigma}$, and hence we have verified the following fact for $\sigma = \sigma_{j}$

$$P[h^{-1}p_{\pm}(h)h_{\sigma}] = P[p_{\pm}(h(z))].$$

Writing $v = ap_{\pm}(z) + w$ and $v' = a'p_{\pm}(z) + w'$ with $s_{\pm}(\mathbb{R}p_{\pm}(z), \mathbb{R}w + Rw') = 0$ and $a, a' \in \mathbb{R}$, we define

$$P_{r}(v, v') = aa's_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] - s_{\pm}(w, w'),$$

which is a positive majorant of $s_{\pm}$. Note, for $\sigma = \sigma_{j}$

$$P_{r}(h^{-1}vh_{\sigma}, h^{-1}v'h_{\sigma}) = aa's_{\pm}(h^{-1}p_{\pm}(z)h_{\sigma}) - s_{\pm}(h^{-1}wh_{\sigma}, h^{-1}w'h_{\sigma}) = P_{h}(z, v'),$$

Then we find

$$P_{r}[v] + s_{\pm}[v] = a^{2}s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] - s_{\pm}[w] + (a^{2}s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] + s_{\pm}[w]) = 2a^{2}s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] = 2s_{\pm}(p_{\pm}(z), v)^{2},$$

since $s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z), v] = s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)]$. Note

$$s_{\pm}[p_{\pm}(z)] = \text{Tr}_{D_{c}/C}(p_{\pm}(z)p_{\pm}(z)) = \pm \text{Tr}_{D_{c}/C}(p_{\pm}(z)p_{\pm}(z)) = \pm 2 \det(p_{\pm}(z)) = 2y(z)^{2},$$

where $y(z) = y$ for $z = (x, y) \in \mathcal{H}$. Write $[z; v] = \text{Tr}_{D_{c}/C}(p_{-}(z)v')$. Combining these formulas,

$$P_{r}[v] = \frac{1}{2} \left\{ -s_{\pm}[v] \pm \left[ \frac{[z; v]}{y(z)^{2}} \right] = \mp N(v) \pm \frac{[z; v]}{2y(z)^{2}} \right\}$$

Therefore, the exponential factor of the standard Schwartz function is

$$e(\pm N(v) \xi + \frac{P_{r}[v]}{2} \sqrt{-1}) = e(\pm N(v) \xi \pm \frac{[z; v]^{2} \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^{2}}).$$

By (6.15), $P_{r}[h^{-1}vh_{\sigma}] = P_{h}(z)[v]$ for $\sigma = \sigma_{j}$, and hence

$$\frac{[z; h^{-1}vh_{\sigma}]^{2}}{2y(h(z))^{2}} = \frac{[e(h(z); v)^{2}]}{2y(h(z))^{2}},$$
which is also valid in Case II for \([z; v]\) defined below. Therefore when \(\sigma = \sigma_J\), we choose a standard Schwartz function \(\phi_\infty : D_{\sigma, A} \to \mathbb{C}\) of weight \(k = n + 2\) as follows

\[
(6.18) \quad \phi_\infty(v) = \Psi_k(v, x; z, \tau) = \Psi_{k, \sigma_J}(v, x; z, \tau) = \eta^{1/2} [g_z^{-1} v g_z^{\sigma_J} ; x]^{n+1} e(\pm N(v) \tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2 y(z)^2},
\]
as in (6.6).

We show a formula similar to (6.18) when \(\sigma = \sigma_1\) choosing \(p_\pm(z)\) differently. We are in Case II, \(D_\mathbb{R} = M_2(\mathbb{R})\), and

\[
(6.19) \quad D_{\sigma_1}^\pm = D_{\sigma_1, \mathbb{R}}^\pm = \left\{ \left( \frac{x}{\sqrt{\tau}}, \frac{\sqrt{\tau} t}{ \pm x} \right) \mid x \in \mathbb{C} \text{ and } b, c \in \mathbb{R} \right\}.
\]

This \(D_{\sigma_1}^\pm\) has signature \((3, 1)\) and the one dimensional negative definite space is generated by \(\sqrt{\tau}(\frac{1}{0} \ 1)\). Let \(p_-(z) = y g_z^x (\frac{1}{0} 1) g_z^{\sigma_1} = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} -xy & 1-x \tau \\ y & -x \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in D_{\sigma_1}^-\) for \(z = (\frac{t}{y} \ -\frac{y}{t}) \in \mathcal{H}\) and \(p_+(z) = \sqrt{-1} p_-(z) \in D_{\sigma_1}^+\). Again (6.14) is valid for \(\sigma = \sigma_1\) for this choice of \(p_\pm(z)\), and similar to the case of \(D_\mathbb{R} = \mathfrak{h}\), defining \(P_\pm(z, v') = -a' s_\pm[p_\pm(z)] s_\pm[w'] + s_\pm(v, w')\) for \(v = a p_\pm(z) + w\) and \(v' = a' p_\pm(z) + w'\) with \(s_\pm(\mathbb{R} p_\pm(z), \mathbb{R} w + \mathbb{R} w') = 0\) and \(a, a' \in \mathbb{R}\) and we find

\[
P_\pm[v] - s_\pm[v] = -2 s_\pm[p_\pm(z), v]^2 s_\pm[p_\pm(z)],
\]

and writing \([z; v] = \text{Tr}_{D_{\sigma_1, \mathbb{C}}}(p_\pm(z) v')\),

\[
(6.20) \quad \frac{P_\pm[v]}{2} = \frac{1}{2} \left( s_\pm[v] + \frac{[z; v]^2}{y(z)^2} \right) = \pm N(v) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2}{2 y(z)^2}.
\]

Thus we choose the canonical Schwartz function of weight \(k = n + 2\) as follows:

\[
(6.21) \quad \phi_\infty(v) = \Psi_k(v, x; z, \tau) = \Psi_{k, \sigma_1}(v, x; z, \tau) = \eta^{1/2} [g_z^{-1} v g_z^{\sigma_1} ; x]^{n+1} e(\pm N(v) \tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2 y(z)^2}.
\]

Though the formula is similar in the two cases, the definition of \([z; v]\) is different in Case ID and Case II. In the two cases \(\sigma = \sigma_J\) and \(\sigma_1\), we define a theta series by

\[
(6.22) \quad \theta_{k, \sigma}(\phi) = \theta_k(\phi)(\tau; z, x) = \sum_{v \in D_{\sigma}} \phi(v) \quad \text{for } \sigma = \sigma_1 \text{ and } \sigma_J.
\]

### 6.6 Invariant pairings and differential operators

To define the theta descent, for any \(E\)-algebra such that \(D_{E_A} \cong M_2(A) \times M_2(A)\), we need the \(D^\times\)-invariant projection \(L_E(n; A) \to A\), the \(D_L^*\)-invariant self duality of \(L_E(n; A)\) and the \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\)-invariant self duality of \((L^*; \mathbb{C})\) induced by the invariant differential operators. The first projection we describe is the \(D^\times\)-invariant operator for \(L_E(n; A)|_{D^*}\), which depends on Cases II and ID. Since \([x]|_{D} \mapsto J[x]|_{D} = [x]_J\) gives an isomorphism of quadratic spaces: \(D_{\sigma_J, \mathbb{C}} \cong D_{\sigma_1, \mathbb{C}}^\pm\), pulling back the invariant differential operator \(\nabla = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial x}\) in Case II by this isomorphism, the corresponding invariant differential in Case ID is \(\nabla := J^*(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y \partial x}) = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial x}\). We record this fact:

\[
(6.23) \quad \nabla := \begin{cases} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y \partial x} & \text{in Case II,} \\ \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x \partial y} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y \partial x} & \text{in Case ID.} \end{cases}
\]

Thus we have a morphism of sheaves

\[
(6.24) \quad (n!)^{-1} \nabla^n : L^*_{E_E}(n; A)|_{Sh_A} \to A|_{Sh_A}.
\]

A canonical \(D^1_{E_A}\)-invariant pairing is induced by

\[
(6.25) \quad \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle (n!)^{-2} \nabla^n \otimes (n!)^{-2} \nabla^n : L^*_E(n; A) \otimes L^*_E(n; A) \to A.
\]

In this case, the left and right factor \(GL_2(A)\) acts by the corresponding embedding (so, no conjugation action of \(\sigma\) involved), and therefore, we do not need to separate two cases II and ID. Writing the
of the identity (resp. $\sigma$) factor of $L_E(n; A)$ as $(X,Y; X', Y')$ (resp. $(S,T; S', T')$), the operators are

$$\nabla_{\text{id}} := \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X\partial T} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y\partial S}$$

$$\nabla_{\sigma} := \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X'\partial T'} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y'\partial S'}.$$ 

We later need to have $(\cdot, \cdot)_n$ written in two different ways:

**Lemma 6.6.** The following diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc}
L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) & \xrightarrow{n!^{-2} \nabla' \otimes n!^{-2} \nabla} & L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \\
\downarrow & & \downarrow \\
\mathbb{C} & \xrightarrow{\mathbb{C}} & \mathbb{C}
\end{array}$$

is commutative.

**Proof.** Regarding $L_E(n; \mathbb{C})$ as a $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$-module, $L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} L_E(n; \mathbb{C})$ is a $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$-module by the left and right factor. The left vertical map is a non-zero morphism of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$-modules, and the right hand side is a non-zero morphism of $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$-modules, where we identify $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C}) = \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \times \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$. As $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$-modules, we have $L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \cong \bigoplus_{k=0}^{2n} L(2k; \mathbb{C})$ and as $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$-modules, $L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \cong \bigoplus_{k=0}^{2n} \bigoplus_{j=0}^{2n} L(2k\text{id} + 2j\sigma; \mathbb{C})$ by Clebsch–Gordan. They have a unique constant quotient $\mathbb{C}$. The projection of $L_E(n; \mathbb{C})$ to $\mathbb{C}$ is given by $n!^{-2} \nabla_n$. Thus we have $n!^{-2} \nabla' \otimes n!^{-2} \nabla$ is $c_n n!^{-2} \nabla \otimes n!^{-2} \nabla$ for a non-zero constant $c_n$. Since $n!^{-2} \nabla \otimes n!^{-2} \nabla$ and $n!^{-2} \nabla' \otimes n!^{-2} \nabla$ have equal value 1 at $X^n Y^n X'^n Y'^n S^n T^n S'^n T'^n$ by the formula (4.1), we find $c_n = 1$. 

We have the second invariant pairing on the $\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$-module $L(n^*; A)$ given by

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle := (n^+!)^{-2} \nabla'^{n^*} : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \to \mathbb{C},$$

where, writing the variable of the left (resp. right) factor $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ as $(S, T)$ (resp. $(S', T')$),

$$\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle' := \frac{\partial^2}{\partial S\partial T'} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial T\partial S'}.$$ 

6.7. **Invariance of $[\alpha; x]$**, For $h \in G^+_D(\mathbb{R})$, we have $h^{-1} \alpha h^\sigma = \alpha$ and $[\alpha; x] = [h^{-1} \alpha h^\sigma; x] = [\alpha; x h^\sigma]$, where $h^\sigma = h'$ in Case II and $h^\sigma = h$ in Case ID (see (6.2)).

**Lemma 6.7.** The polynomial $[\alpha; x]^{n+1}$ is an element of $H^0(D^1_{\alpha; \mathbb{R}}, L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}))$, and

$$[\alpha; x]^{n+1} \in \begin{cases} \mathbb{C} \left[ (X,Y) J^{-1} \left( \frac{X'}{Y'} \right) \right]^{n+1} & \text{if } D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = j^{-1} \mathbb{H} j \Leftrightarrow \alpha = j^{-1} x j^\sigma, \\
\mathbb{C} \left[ (X,Y) J^{-1} \left( \frac{X'}{Y'} \right) \right]^{n+1} & \text{if } D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = j M_2(\mathbb{R}) j^{-1} \Leftrightarrow \alpha = j^{-1} x j^\sigma \end{cases}.$$

for some $j \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$, where “$\Leftrightarrow$” means an identity up to a power of $\sqrt{-1}$ and $x = 1$ if $D_\mathbb{R} \cong D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}}$ and $x = J$ if $D_\mathbb{R} \not\cong D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}}$. Here $h \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ acts on $L_E(n; \mathbb{C})$ by the pullback action of $(X,Y; X', Y') \mapsto (\mathbb{H}(X,Y) h; (X', Y') h)$.

**Proof.** The identity $H^0(\mathbb{H}^1, L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})) = H^0(\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}), L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})) = \mathbb{C}(XX' + YY')^{n+1}$ shows the assertion when $D_\mathbb{R} = j^{-1} \mathbb{H} j$. If $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = j M_2(\mathbb{R}) j^{-1}$, this follows from

$$H^0(\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}), L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})) = \mathbb{C}(XY' - X'Y)^{n+1}.$$
6.8. Relation between SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$-polynomial representations. The automorphic form $f \in M_k(\Gamma)$ gives a global section of $L^*(n^*; \mathbb{C})$. To relate the theta series with values in $L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})$ and modular forms with values in $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$, we study the relation of the two modules under the action of SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$.

Write $\pi : L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ for the SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$-equivariant projection as in [H94, (11.2)].

**Lemma 6.8.** If we let GL$_2(\mathbb{C})$ act on $L_E(n+1; A)$ for a $E_{\mathbb{C}}$-algebra $A$ by the pull-back action of $(X,Y; X', Y') \mapsto (\langle X,Y \rangle g; \langle X', Y' \rangle g)$, the map $\pi : L_E(n+1; A) \rightarrow L(n^*; A)$ given by

$$
\pi(\Phi(X,Y; X', Y')) = \begin{cases} 
(\Phi((S,T);(S,T)J) = \Phi(S,T; -T,S) & \text{in Case II,} \\
(\Phi(-(S,T)J; (S,T)) = \Phi(T,-S; S,T) & \text{in Case ID} 
\end{cases}
$$

is SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$-equivariant.

The projection $\pi : L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ is given by the following variable change:

$$
x = (X,Y; X',Y') \mapsto \tilde{x} := \begin{cases} 
(T,-S;S,T) & \text{in Case ID} \\
(S,T; -S,T) & \text{in Case I} 
\end{cases}
$$

of SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$-modules unique up to scalar multiplication. Write $\pi(\Phi(x)) = \Phi(\tilde{x})$; so,

$$
[v; \tilde{x}] := \pi([v,x]).
$$

**Proof.** We first deal with Case ID. Since $\pi = J^{-1}uJ$ on $u \in \mathbb{H}^1 = \text{Ker}(N : \mathbb{H}^* \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^*)$, in Case ID,

$$
[x]_D = i'(X,Y)(X',Y')
$$
and

$$
\pi([x]_D) = J'(S,T)(S,T)u = J'\pi([x]_D) = J'(S,T)(S,T)u = J'(S,T)(S,T)u = J'(S,T)(S,T)u = u \cdot (\pi[x]_D),
$$

since $i' = J^{-1}J$. This is compatible as $D_{\sigma_1}^{\pm} \cong D_{\sigma_1}^{\mp}$ by $[x]_D \mapsto J[x]_D$. Similar to this

$$
J^{-1}[x]_D h = h \cdot (\pi[x]_D) \quad \text{for } h \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
$$

The case II can be treated similarly. □

We now compute the adjoint $\pi^* : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})$ of $\pi : L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ to show integrality of $\pi^*$ (though we do not use the formula explicitly in this paper). We have a bilinear pairing $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_{n+1} : L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ given by (6.25) and $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ given in (6.27). Then $\langle P, \pi^* Q \rangle = \langle \pi P, Q \rangle$ for the adjoint $\pi^*$ of $\pi$, and we write

$$
\pi^* s^{n+1-i+i'} t^{n+1-i'i'} = \sum_{j,j'} c_{j,j'} x^j y^{n+1-j} x'^j y'^{n+1-j'}.
$$

Since highest (resp. lowest) weight of $\text{sym}^{n^*} \text{of SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$ is $a \mapsto a^{n^*}$ (resp. $a \mapsto a^{-n^*}$), we have $\pi^*(S^{n^*}) = c X^{n+1} Y^{n+1} + 1$ and $\pi^*(T^{n^*}) = c' Y^{n+1} X^{n+1} - 1$ for non-zero constants $c, c'$. Thus

$$
c_{n+1;j,j'} = 0 \quad \text{if } (j,j') \neq (n+1,0), \quad \text{and similarly, } c_{n+1;j,j'} = 0 \quad \text{if } (j,j') \neq (0,n+1).
$$

Since $\pi \pi^*$ commutes with SU$_2(\mathbb{R})$-action and $L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ is irreducible SU$_2(\mathbb{C})$-module, $\pi \pi^*$ is a scalar multiplication. We have by [H99, page 141]

$$
(X^{n+1-i} Y^{i-j} X^{n+1-i'} Y'^{n+1-i'} X'^{j-j'} Y'^{n+1-i'} Y'^{n+1-j'}) = \delta_{i-j,j'-j'} (-1)^{i+j'} \left( \begin{array}{c} n+1 \\ i \end{array} \right) \left( \begin{array}{c} n+1 \\ i' \end{array} \right)^{-1}.
$$

Similar to this computation, $\langle S^{n^*} t^i, s^{n^*} t^{-i} \rangle = \delta_{i-j} (-1)^i \left( \begin{array}{c} n^* \\ i \end{array} \right)^{-1}$. Since

$$
\pi(x^{n+1-i} y^{i-j} x'^{n+1-i'} y'^{n+1-j'}) = (-1)^{n+1-i} s^{n+1-i+i'} t^{n+1+i-i'},
$$

by $\langle \pi \pi P, Q \rangle = \langle \pi P, \pi Q \rangle$,

$$
\langle \pi^* s^{n+1-i+i'} t^{n+1+i-i'}, x^j y^{n+1-j} x'^j y'^{n+1-j'} \rangle = (-1)^{n+1-i'} (\pi^* x^{n+1-i} y^{i-j} x'^{n+1-i'} y'^{n+1-j'} x'^{j-j'} y'^{n+1-j'})
$$

$$
= (-1)^{n+1-i'} (-1)^i \delta_{i'-j-j'} \left( \begin{array}{c} n^* \\ n+1+i-i' \end{array} \right)^{-1}.
$$
This shows

\[(6.33) \quad (1)^{k'} \delta_{i-i',k-k'} \left( \binom{n}{n+1+i-i'} \right)^{-1} = (\pi^* \mathcal{A} \cap T_{n+1+i-i'} \cdot X^n Y^n + 1 - k X^{k'} Y^{n+1-k'})
\]

\[= \sum_{j,j'} c_{i',j',j,j'} (X^n Y^{n+1-j} X^{i'} Y^{n+1-j'} \cdot X^n Y^n + 1 - k X^{k'} Y^{n+1-k'})
\]

\[= \sum_{j,j'} c_{i',j',j,j'} (-1)^{j+j'} \left[ \binom{n+1}{j} \binom{n+1}{j'} \right]^{-1}
\]

\[= \sum_{j,j'} c_{i',j',j,j'} (-1)^{j+j'} \left[ \binom{n+1}{j} \binom{n+1}{j'} \right]^{-1}.
\]

Take \(a \in \mathbb{C}^n\) with \(a \pi = 1\) and put \(u_a = \text{diag}[a, \pi] \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})\). Taking \(k = 0\) and \(k' = n + 1\) in (6.33), we find, if \(i = 0\)

\[(-1)^{n+1} = \sum_{j,j'} c_{i',j',j,j'} (-1)^{j+j'} \left[ \binom{n+1}{j} \binom{n+1}{j'} \right]^{-1},
\]

and by (6.32), \(c_{0,n+1,0,0} = 1\) and \(c_{n+1,0,0,n+1} = 1\). Therefore

\[(6.34) \quad \pi^* (S^n) = X^n + 1 Y^n + 1 \quad \text{and} \quad \pi^* (T^n) = Y^n + 1 X^n + 1.
\]

Take \(h = (a \ b) \in SO_2(\mathbb{R}) \mathbb{R}^\times\). Then

\[\pi^* (h P(S, T)) = \pi^* (P((S, T)^t) h') = \pi^* (P((X, Y)^t h; (X', Y')^t h)),
\]

and thus

\[\pi^* ((a S - b T)n^*) = \pi^* (h S^n) = h X^n + 1 Y^n + 1 = (a X - b Y)^n + 1 (b X' + a Y')^n + 1.
\]

Therefore

\[
\begin{aligned}
\sum_{i=0}^{n} (-1)^i \binom{n}{i} a^{n-i} b^i \pi^* (S^n-i T^i) \\
= \sum_{j=0}^{n+1} \sum_{j'=0}^{n+1} (-1)^j \binom{n+1}{j} \binom{n+1}{j'} a^{n-j-j'} b^{j+j'} X^{n+1-j} Y^{j} X^{i'} Y^{n+1-j'}.
\end{aligned}
\]

From this we conclude

\[(6.35) \quad (-1)^i \binom{n}{i} \pi^* (S^n-i T^i) = \sum_{j,j'=i} (-1)^j \binom{n+1}{j} \binom{n+1}{j'} X^{n+1-j} Y^{j} X^{i'} Y^{n+1-j'}.
\]

We record this fact as

**Lemma 6.9.** We have the following explicit form of \(\pi^* : L(n^n; \mathbb{C}) \mapsto L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})\):

\[(6.36) \quad \pi^* (S^n-i T^i) = \sum_{j,j'=i} (-1)^j \binom{i}{j} \binom{n-i}{n+1-j} \binom{n}{n+1}^{-1} X^{n+1-j} Y^{j} X^{i'} Y^{n+1-j'}.
\]

Note that \(\binom{n}{i} S^n-i T^i\) \(i\) is an \(A\)-basis of the dual lattice \(L(n^n; A)\) \(\pi^*\) of \(L(n; A)\) under \((\cdot, \cdot)\) for any integral domain \(A\) of characteristic 0 and the same for \(\binom{n+1}{j} X^{n+1-j} Y^{j} X^{i'} Y^{n+1-j'}\) \(j,j'\) for \(L_E(n+1; A)\) \(\pi^*\) under \((\cdot, \cdot)\). Thus by (6.35), \(\pi^*\) is integral with respect to the dual integral structure of \(L_E(n+1; A)\). Write

\[(6.37) \quad s^* := (\pi^* (S^n-i T^i)),
\]

in the sense that \(\pi^* P(s) = P(s^*) \in L_E(n+1; \mathbb{C})\) for \(P(s) \in L(n^n; \mathbb{C})\).
6.9. Vanishing of \((α; X)^n, f\) if \(D_{α, R} \cong \mathbb{H}\). Write \(s = (S, T)\) for the variables of \(L(n^*; \mathbb{C})\). Identifying \(D_{E^s} = GL_2(\mathbb{C})\), a quaternionic modular form \(f(h; s) : D^\times \setminus D_{E}^s \to L(n^*; \mathbb{C})\) \((k = n + 2\) and \(n^* = 2n + 2\) on \(\widehat{Γ}\) of weight \(k\infty + k\infty\) satisfies

\[
(6.38) \quad f(γzuz_\infty; s) = f(x; s^t u_\infty^s) \quad \text{for} \quad u_\infty \in \widehat{Γ} \cdot SU_2(\mathbb{R}), \ z \in E^s_k \quad \text{and} \quad γ \in D^\times,
\]

where \(u^s_\infty = u^{-1}_\infty\) if \(σ = σ_1\) and \(u^s_\infty = u^{-1}_\infty\) if \(σ = σ_2\). Here \(SU_2(\mathbb{R}) = \{u \in \mathbb{H}^\times | N(u) = 1\}\) is the stabilizer in \(SL_2(\mathbb{C})\) of \(ε = -J \in \mathcal{H}\) and \(u \in GL_2(A)\) acts on \(P(s) \in L(n^*; A)\) by \(P|u(s) = P(s'u')\). Define for \(f\) as above and \(j \in SL_2(\mathbb{C})\),

\[
(6.39) \quad f|_{\mathcal{H}_j}(z; s^*) := f(j(z); s^*j^*) \quad \text{and} \quad f|_{Gf}(h; s^*) := f(jh; s^*),
\]

where \(h = h^t h^t\) in Case II and \(h = h^t\) in Case ID. Then writing \(jg = g_j(z)u\) for \(u \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})\)

\[
f|_{Gf}(jg; s^*g_j^{-1}) = f(jg; s^*g_j^{-1}) = f(g_j(z); s^*(ug_j^{-1})^t) = f(g_j(z); s^*(g_j^{-1}j)^t) = f|_{\mathcal{H}_j}(z; s^*).
\]

**Lemma 6.10.** Let \(j \in SL_2(\mathbb{C})\). Assume \(f(j^{-1}g_0; s^*) \neq 0\) for some \(g_0 \in D_{E^s}^1\). Then the subspace of \(L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})\) spanned by \(\{f|_{Gf^{-1}}(g_0; s^*u^{-1}_\infty)\}_{u_\infty \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})}\) for \(u \in SL_2(\mathbb{R})\) is equal to \(π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) for \(π : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \to L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})\) as in \(6.8\). In particular,

\[
\{(1, X)^{n+1}, f|_{Gf^{-1}}(g_0; s^*)\} = 0 \quad \text{if} \quad D_{E^s} \cong \mathbb{H} \quad \text{and} \quad \{(J, X)^{n+1}, f|_{Gf^{-1}}(g_0; s^*)\} = 0 \quad \text{if} \quad D_{E^s} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R}).
\]

**Proof.** By a variable change \(j^{-1}g \to g\), we may assume that \(j = 1\). Write \(V\) for the subspace of \(L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})\) spanned by \(\{f(g_0; s^*u^{-1}_\infty)\}_{u_\infty \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})}\). As a \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\)-module, \(π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) is irreducible. Since \(\{f(g_0; s^*u^{-1}_\infty)\}_{u_\infty \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})} \subset π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) as \(f(g_0; s^*) = π^*(f(g_0; s^*))\), \(f(g; s^*) \neq 0, 0 \neq V \subset π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) is a non-trivial subspace stable under the action of \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\). The irreducibility of \(π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) as an \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\)-module tells us that \(V = π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) as desired.

Suppose \(D_E = \mathbb{H}\). Since \(\{1; X^h_\sigma\} = \{hh^t - σ_1; X^h_\sigma\}\) for \(h \in SU_2(\mathbb{R}) = D_E^2\) if \(D_E = \mathbb{H}\), \(J, X\) is invariant under \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\) and is orthogonal to \(π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) under \((\cdot, \cdot)\). This shows the desired vanishing.

Suppose \(D_E = M_2(\mathbb{R})\). Since \(\{J; Xh_\sigma\} = \{hh^t - σ_1; X^h_\sigma\}\) for \(h \in SU_2(\mathbb{R})\), \(J, X\) is invariant under \(SU_2(\mathbb{R})\) and is again orthogonal to \(π^*(L(n^*; \mathbb{C}))\) under \((\cdot, \cdot)\). Thus the vanishing follows. \(\square\)

We will see later in the proof of Proposition 7.2 that this lemma implies the vanishing of \((α; X)^{n+1}, f\) if \(D_{α, R} \cong \mathbb{H}\).

6.10. **Theta differential form.** We now interpret \(θ(φ)\) as a differential form. Let \(Ω^\nu_{S/\mathbb{C}}\) be the sheaf of analytic differential \(ν\)-forms on \(S = Γ\phi\). Since \(S\) does not have complex structure, we use the symbol \(S\) instead of \(S_E\). Note \(Ω^\nu_{S/\mathbb{C}} \cong L_E^\nu(1; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \mathcal{O}_S\) (for the sheaf \(\mathcal{O}_S\) of analytic functions on \(S\)) as we will see. We first prove

**Lemma 6.11.** We have a canonical inclusion \(i : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \hookrightarrow L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L_E(1; \mathbb{C})\) of \(GL_2(E)\)-modules given by \(i((v; x)^{n+1}) = [v; x]^n \otimes [v; s]\) for all \(v \in D_σ\).

**Proof.** We prove that the formula in the lemma gives the linear injection. Write \(x = (X, Y; X', Y')\) (resp. \(s = (S, T; S', T')\)) for the variables of \(L_E(n; \mathbb{C})\) (resp. \(L_E(1; \mathbb{C})\)). We write \([v; s]\) for \([v; x]_{|x=s}\). Then the map \(i^\nu : [v; x]^{n+1} \hookrightarrow [v; x]^n \otimes [v; s]\) satisfies \(i^\nu([v; x]^{n+1}) = i^\nu([v; x]^{n+1}) = [v; x]^n \otimes [v; s]\) for scalar \(ζ\). Since \(i^\nu\) is a polynomial map in \(v\), by Zariski density of \(\{x^n| x \in G_E(\mathbb{C})\}\) inside \(G_E(\mathbb{C})\), we find that \(i^\nu\) extends to a linear map \(i : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \to L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L_E(1; \mathbb{C})\). Since \(i\) plainly sends \([g^{-1}vg^r; x]\) to \([g^{-1}vg^r; x] \otimes [g^{-1}vg^r; s]\), by (6.2), \(i\) is \(SL_2(E)\)-equivariant. By definition

\[
i((v; x)^{n+1}) = [v; x]^n \otimes [v; s] \quad \text{for all} \quad v \in D_σ.
\]

By irreducibility of \(L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})\), \(i\) is an injection. \(\square\)

This lemma is useful when we compute \(n^{-2}ν^\nu_i(\phi(θ(ν)))\). Indeed, we only need to compute \(n^{-2}ν^\nu_i((v; x)^n)\) not the derivative of \([v; x]^{n+1}\) which is a coefficients of \(θ(ν)\).

**Proposition 6.12.** We have a canonical monomorphism \(i_\nu : L_E^\nu(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \hookrightarrow L_E^\nu(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes Ω^\nu_{S/\mathbb{C}}\) for \(ν = 1, 2\) as sheaves over \(S\).
Proof. By Lemma 6.11, we have an inclusion $\iota : L_E(n+1; \C) \hookrightarrow L_E(n; \C) \otimes_{\C} L_E(1; \C)$ of $\text{SL}_2(E)$-modules. Thus we need to embed $L_E(1; \C)$ into $\Omega^2_{S/JC}$. Though $L_E(1; \C)$ is an irreducible $\text{SL}_2(\C)$-module, it is reducible over $\text{SU}_2(\R)$. Thus as $\text{SU}_2(\R)$-module, we have $L_E(1; \C) \cong \C \oplus L(2; \C)$. Since $(X,Y)u'((X',Y')u') = (X,Y)u'u'^* (X',Y')$, on the subspace $\C (XX'+YY') \subset L_E(1, \C)$, $\text{SU}_2(\R)$ acts trivially. Identifying $L_E(1; \C)/\C (XX' + YY') \cong \C (-XY') + \C (X X' - YY') + C X Y$, since $(X,Y) \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) = (a X - b Y, b X + a Y)$ and $(X', Y') \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) = (a^* X' - b Y', b X' + a Y')$, the matrix representation of $(XY', XX' - YY', YY') \mapsto (XY', XX' - YY', YY') \cdot u$

for $u = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in \text{SU}_2(\R)$ is given modulo $\C (XX' + YY')$ by

$$(XY', XX' - YY', YY') \cdot \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) = (XY', XX' - YY', YY') \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a^2 & 2ab & b^2 \\ ab & a^2 - bb & a b \\ b^2 & a b & a^2 \end{smallmatrix} \right) = \rho_2(u).$$

On the other hand, Let $\varepsilon = -J = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in H$. Recall the isomorphisms $\text{SO}_{D_n}(\R) = G_{D_n}(\C)/R^\times$ and $\text{SO}_{D_n}(\R)/\text{SO}(\R) = \text{SL}_2(\C)/\text{SU}_2(\R) \cong H = \{ z = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} x & y \\ y & x \end{smallmatrix} \right) \mid x, y, 0 \leq x, y \in \R \}$ and the standard automorphic factor given by $j\left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right), z = \rho(c)z + \rho(d)$. We let $G_{D_n}(\R) \subset \text{GL}_2(\C)$ act on $H$ by $\left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right)(c) = (\rho(a)z + \rho(b)) \rho(c)z + \rho(d)^{-1}$, and identifying $\text{SO}_{D_n}(\R)$ with $\text{G}_{D_n}(\R)/R^\times$, the orthogonal group acts transitively on $H$. The stabilizer of $\varepsilon$ is $\text{SO}(\R)$ (congruent to $\text{SU}_2(\R)$ modulo center). For $u = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) \in \text{SU}_2(\R)$,

$$t^\dagger j(u, \varepsilon) = j\left( -\left( \begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{smallmatrix} \right) \right) \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{smallmatrix} \right) = \left( \begin{smallmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 \end{smallmatrix} \right) = u^{-1} \in \text{SU}_2(\R) \Leftrightarrow j(u, \varepsilon) = \pi.$$

As in [H94, (2.4), (2.9b)], writing

$$\omega_1 := (dx, dy, -a dx) \text{ and } \omega_2 := y^{-1}(dy \wedge dx, -2 dx \wedge d\tau, d\tau, dy \wedge d\tau)$$

as the vector valued differential forms, we have $i t^\dagger j(u, \varepsilon) \mid_{\omega \nu} = \rho_2(t^\dagger j(u, \varepsilon) \mid_{\omega \nu})$ for $\nu = 1, 2$, and

$$\rho_2\left( \begin{smallmatrix} a & b \\ -b & a \end{smallmatrix} \right) \left[ \begin{smallmatrix} s^2 \\ T^2 \end{smallmatrix} \right] = \left[ \begin{smallmatrix} a^2 & 2ab & b^2 \\ ab & a^2 - bb & a b \\ b^2 & a b & a^2 \end{smallmatrix} \right] \left[ \begin{smallmatrix} s^2 \\ T^2 \end{smallmatrix} \right].$$

More generally, as $j(g, \varepsilon) = y^{-1/2}$, for $\nu = 1, 2$,

$$u^* g^\nu \omega \nu \mid_z = \rho_2(t^\dagger j(g, u, \varepsilon) \mid_{\omega \nu}) = y^{-1} \omega \nu \mid_z \Leftrightarrow u^* g^\nu \omega \nu \mid_z = \omega \nu \mid_z \rho_2(t^\dagger j(g, u, \varepsilon)) = y^{-1} \omega \nu \mid_z.$$

Thus replacing the basis $(-XY', XX' - YY', YY')$ of $L_E(1; \C)\big/\C (XX' + YY')$ by $y^{-1} \omega \nu \mid_z$, we get a morphism

$$i = i_\nu : L_E(n+1; \C) \to L_E(n; \C) \otimes_{\C} \Omega_{S/JC}^\nu \text{ for } \nu = 1, 2.$$

Writing the stalk at $\varepsilon$ of $\Omega_{S/JC}^\nu$ as $\Omega_{\varepsilon}^\nu$, consider the morphism $i_\nu : L_E(n+1; \C) \to L_E(n; \C) \otimes_{\C} \Omega_{\varepsilon}^\nu$ induced by the stalk at $\varepsilon$. By the pull-back action of the stabilizer of $\varepsilon$, $\text{SU}_2(\R)$ acts on $\Omega_{\varepsilon}^\nu$. We have an isomorphism $\Omega_{\varepsilon}^\nu \cong \text{L}(2; \C) \otimes_{\C} \text{O}_x$ for the germ $\text{O}_x$ of analytic functions around $\varepsilon$ of $H$. By Clebsch-Gordan, we have decomposition into irreducible factors

\begin{align*}
(1) & L_E(n+1; \C)_{|\text{SU}_2(\R)} = \bigoplus_{k=0}^n L(2k; \C) \\
(2) & L_E(n; \C)_{|\text{SU}_2(\R) \otimes_{\C} \text{L}(2; \C)} \cong \bigoplus_{k=0}^n L(2k; \C) \otimes_{\C} \text{L}(2; \C) = \bigoplus_{k=0}^n \bigoplus_{i=0}^{2k+2} L(2i; \C).
\end{align*}

Since highest weight vectors of $\text{L}(2j; \C)$ in (1) survive in the product $L_E(n; \C)_{|\text{SU}_2(\R) \otimes_{\C} \text{L}(2; \C)}$, $i_\varepsilon$ is an injection. By local constancy, the morphism $i$ is a monomorphism of sheaves.

\begin{corollary} We have an analytic global section  
$$\Theta(\phi)(\tau; g; x) = \Theta_{i_\nu}(\phi)(\tau; g; x) := i_{\nu,*}\theta(\phi)(\tau; g; x)$$

of $L_E^*(n; \C) \otimes_{\C} \Omega_{S/JC}^\nu$ by composing $i_\nu$ in Proposition 6.12 with $\theta(\phi)(\tau; g; x)$.  
\end{corollary}
Since \( \pi^* : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})|_{SU_2(\mathbb{R})} \) is an embedding of \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-modules, we have sheaf inclusion \( \pi^* : L^*(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L^*_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \). In this sense, we consider \( \pi^* \circ f \) for \( f \in M_k(\Gamma_0) \) and regard it as a harmonic global section of \( L^*_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \) over \( S = \Gamma_0 \backslash \mathcal{H} \). By the isomorphism \( L^*_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \cong \tilde{L}_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \), we may also regard \( f^* \) as a harmonic global section of \( \tilde{L}_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \). Further composing \( i_{\nu_*} \) for \( i_\nu : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \Omega_S^{\nu} / \mathcal{C} \), we may regard

\[
\omega_\nu(f) := \nu_{\nu_*} \circ f
\]

as a harmonic closed form with values in \( L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} \Omega_S^{\nu} / \mathcal{C} \) by (M1–3) [H94, Proposition 2.1] whose cohomology class in de Rham cohomology \( H^*(S; L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C})) \) is the class of the cohomological form \( f \) as in (M1–3) in §6.1. Then we define the 2-dimensional period of \( f \) over \( Sh_\alpha \cong \Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H} \) by

\[
P_\alpha(f) := \int_{Sh_\alpha} (n!)^{-2} \nabla^n \omega_\nu(f) = \int_{Sh_\alpha} \omega_\nu(f) \quad (\nabla = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X \partial Y} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X \partial Y}).
\]

The second identity follows from the fact that the 2-cycle period is nontrivial only for constant sheaves.

### 6.11. Compatibility of invariant paring and wedge product

Consider the pairing \([\cdot, \cdot]_n = (\cdot, \cdot) \otimes \cdots (\cdot, \cdot) : (L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{S/\mathcal{C}}) \otimes (L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^1_{S/\mathcal{C}}) \rightarrow \Omega^3_{S/\mathcal{C}} \) for the invariant pairing \((\cdot, \cdot)_n : L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \) given by \((n!)^{-2} \nabla^2_n \otimes (n!)^{-2} \nabla^2_n \) as in (4.40) and \((\omega, \omega') = \omega \wedge \omega'\). We compare two sheaf pairings \((\cdot, \cdot)_{n + 1}\) and \([\cdot, \cdot]_n\).

**Lemma 6.14.** The following diagram of sheaf pairing is commutative:

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
L^*_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) & \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} L^*_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) & \xrightarrow{i_2 \otimes i_1} (L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{S/\mathcal{C}}) \otimes (L^*_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^1_{S/\mathcal{C}}) \\
\downarrow{(\cdot, \cdot)+1} & & \downarrow{\gamma_3[\cdot, \cdot]_n} \\
\mathbb{C} & \xrightarrow{i} & \mathcal{O}_S d\mu_z,
\end{array}
\]

where \( i \) is given by \( i(u) = i_0(u) \cdot d\mu_z \) for the inclusion \( i_0 : \mathbb{C} \hookrightarrow \mathcal{O}_S \).

**Proof.** The diagram (6.45) induces the diagram of stalks at \( \varepsilon \):

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) & \otimes_{\mathbb{C}} L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) & \xrightarrow{i_2 \otimes i_1} (L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{S, \varepsilon/\mathcal{C}}) \otimes (L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^1_{S, \varepsilon/\mathcal{C}}) \\
\downarrow{(\cdot, \cdot)+1} & & \downarrow{[\cdot, \cdot]} \\
\mathbb{C} & \xrightarrow{i} & \mathcal{O}_{S, \varepsilon} d\mu_z | \varepsilon.
\end{array}
\]

We prove first commutativity of (6.46): Since \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \subset SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) fixes \( \varepsilon \), by the construction of \( i_\nu \), the left hand side of the top row is a morphism of \( SU_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-modules via the action of \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) on \( \mathcal{H} \). Regarding the sheaves in the top line of (6.45) as sheaves over \( \mathcal{H} \), it is a right module over \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) by the pullback action of the left action of \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \) on \( \mathcal{H} \). Then \( i_2 \otimes i_1 \) in (6.45) is also \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-equivariant. Since the pairings \((\cdot, \cdot)_{n + 1}\) and \([\cdot, \cdot]_n\) is \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-invariant, we have \([i_2(x), i_1(y)]_n\) is fixed by \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \). This implies \([i_2(x), i_1(y)]_n = c_n i((x, y), n + 1) + i((x, y)) = i_0((x, y))d\mu_z \) for a nonzero constant \( c_n \) and \( i_0((x, y)) \in \mathbb{C} \).

We need to show that the constant \( c_n \) is independent of \( n \) and is equal to 1. The construction of \( i_\nu \) is made in two steps:

\[
(1) \quad i : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \hookrightarrow L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L_E(1; \mathbb{C}), \\
(2) \quad L_\nu : L_E(1; \mathbb{C}) \rightarrow \Omega^1_{H^1/\mathcal{C}}.
\]

The item (1) is the morphism of \( SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \)-modules. The item (2) at the stalk of \( \varepsilon \) is given by \(-XY', XX' - YY', YY'\) \rightarrow \gamma_3_{\varepsilon/\sigma} \) with \((XX' + YY') \rightarrow 0\). We have an invariant pairing \((\cdot, \cdot)_{1} \) on \( L_E(1; \mathbb{C}) \otimes L_E(1, \mathbb{C}) \) given by \( \nabla_1 \otimes \nabla_\sigma. \) Writing the left (resp. right) variables as \((X, Y; X', Y')\) (resp. \((S, T; S', T')\)). We have

\[
(XX', TT') = (YY', SS') = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad (XY', TS') = (YX', ST') = -1
\]

and all other combinations of monomials vanishes for the pairing. Thus

\[
(-XY', TS') = (X', -ST') = 1 \quad \text{and} \quad (XX' - YY', TT' - SS') = 2.
\]
Recall $y^{-1} \omega_2 = y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx, -2dx \wedge d\overline{x}, dy \wedge d\overline{x})$ and $y^{-1} \omega_1 = y^{-1}(dx, -dy, -d\overline{x})$. As we have done in the proof of Proposition 6.12, we apply complex conjugation to $\omega_1$, getting

$$y^{-1} \overline{\omega_2} = y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx, -2dx \wedge d\overline{x}, dy \wedge d\overline{x})$$

Then $i_2(-XY') \wedge i_1(TS') = -y^{-3}dy \wedge dx \wedge d\overline{x}$ and $i_2(YX') \wedge i_1(ST') = y^{-3}dy \wedge dx \wedge d\overline{x}$. Thus $I_2 \otimes I_1$ sends the pairing $(\cdot, \cdot)$ to $(\cdot, \cdot)$, and $(\cdot)_n \otimes (\cdot)_1$ is equivalent to $(\cdot)_n \otimes (\cdot)_1$ under $I_2 \otimes I_1$ at $\varepsilon$.

We now study how $\iota$ sends $(\cdot)_n \otimes (\cdot)_1$ to $(\cdot)_n \otimes (\cdot)_1$. By Clebsch–Gordan [H94, (11.2b)], we have a decomposition of $SL_2(E)$-modules

$$L_E(n; E) \otimes_{\C} L_E(1; \C)$$

$$= L_E(n+1; \C) \otimes_{\C} L_E((n+1) id + (n-1) \sigma; \C) \otimes_{\C} L_E((n-1) id + (n+1) \sigma; \C) \otimes_{\C} L_E(n-1; \C),$$

where $L_E(2l id + 2k \sigma; \C) = L(2l; \C) \otimes_{\C} L(2k; \C)$ with $g \in GL_2(E)$ acting by $Sym^{(2l)} g$ on the left factor and $Sym^{(2k)} g$ on the right factor. The canonical projection of $L_E(n; E) \otimes_{\C} L_E(1; \C)$ to the complement of $L_E(n+1; \C)$ is given by $\nabla \otimes \nabla \sigma^\dagger$ and the projection to $L_E(n+1; \C)$ is given by $\pi: P(X, Y, X'; Y'; S, T; S', T') \mapsto P(X, Y, X'; Y'; S, T; Y', X')$ writing the left variable as $(X, Y; X', Y')$ and the right variable as $(S, T; S', T')$. Thus the inclusion $L_E(n+1; \C) \hookrightarrow L_E(n; E) \otimes_{\C} L_E(1; \C)$ is given by the adjoint $\pi^*$ of $\pi$ with respect to the invariant perfect pairings $(\cdot, \cdot) := (\cdot)_n \otimes (\cdot)_1$.

We compute $(\pi^*(P), \pi^*(Q)) = (\pi \pi^*(P), Q)$. Then $\pi \circ \pi^*$ is the scalar multiplication by $c_n$ on $L_E(n+1; \C)$ and $\pi^* \circ \pi$ is the scalar multiplication on $\pi^*(L_E(n+1; \C))$. They have equal scalar value $c_n$. Take $X^n X' T S' S''$ and $Y^n Y'^n T T'' \in L_E(n; E) \otimes_{\C} L_E(1; \C)$ which are the highest and the lowest weight with respect to the diagonal torus $T(A) = \{ diag(a, a^{-1}) | a \in A^\times \}$. Namely they are generators over $Q[GL_2(E)]$ of $\pi^*(L_E(n+1; \C))$. We have $\pi(X^n X' T S S') = X^{n+1} X' n+1$ and $\pi(Y^n Y'^n T T'') = Y^{n+1} Y'^n+1$. Then $\pi((X^n X' S S'), (Y^n Y'^n T T'')) = 1$, and hence $\pi^* \pi = 1$. This shows that $c_n = 1$, and the commutativity of (6.46).

We finish the proof of Lemma 6.14. The product $(\cdot, \cdot)_1$ is invariant under the center action while $(\cdot, \cdot)_1$ is not (i.e., $(y^{-1/2}, y^{-1/2})_1 = y^{-1}(\cdot, \cdot)_1$). To adjust this, we need to multiply $y(\zeta)$ to assure the commutativity of the sheaf pairing in (6.45) from the commutativity at $\varepsilon$. 

7. DEFINITE D WITH IMAGINARY E

In this section, we study the case where $D$ is definite and $E$ is imaginary.

7.1. SIEGEL–WELL FOR DEFINITE D AND IMAGINARY E. Recall $\delta_+ = 1$ and that $\Delta_+ < 0$ is the square-free part of $\Delta$ with $\delta_+ = \sqrt{\Delta_+}$. We have the decomposition $D^\pm = Z^\pm \oplus D_0^\pm$ so that $Z^\pm = \delta_1 Q \subset D^\pm_0$ with $L_2 = N \delta_1 \Z$. We take $\phi^\infty_\mathbb{Z} := \psi$ on $L_2^\times/L_2 = N^{-1} \Z/N \Z$ for a Dirichlet character $\psi: \Z/N \Z \rightarrow \C$. We take an Eichler order $R(N_0)$ in $D_E$ for $N_0$ prime to $\theta$. Then let $\phi_\mathbb{Z}^{(\infty)} \in S(D_0, A_\mathbb{Z}(\infty))$ be as in (4.25) for the characteristic function $\phi_\mathbb{Z}$ of $\delta_1 \mathbb{R}(N_0) \cap D_0 A_\mathbb{Z}(\infty)$. Again Remark 4.5 applies; so, we pretend $\phi^{(\infty)} = \phi_\mathbb{Z}$. Put

$$\phi^{(\infty)} (x) = \phi_\mathbb{Z}^{(\infty)} \otimes \phi^{(\infty)}(\varepsilon)$$

$$\phi_0(v) := \phi_0^{(v(\infty))}[\varepsilon^{-1}: x]^{n+1} e(\pm N(v) x) \xi + \frac{P_D[v(x)]}{2} \eta \sqrt{-1}$$

for $P_D(x, y)$ as in (6.3). Note that $Z$ is positive and $D_0$ is negative definite and

$$r_2(g; \tau)(\mathbb{Z}) e(\langle N(3\infty) \rangle / |\tau|) = \eta(1+2j) |4j\xi_{\mathbb{Z}} e(\langle N(3\infty) \rangle)|$$

$$r_2(g; \tau)(\mathbf{R}) e(\langle N(\mathbf{R}) \rangle / |\tau|) = \eta^{(3+2j)} |4j\xi_{\mathbb{Z}} e(\langle N(\mathbf{R}) \rangle)|$$

$$r_2(g; \tau)(\mathbf{R}) e(\langle N(\mathbf{R}) \rangle / |\tau|) = \eta^{(3+2j)} |4j\xi_{\mathbb{Z}} e(\langle N(\mathbb{Z}) \rangle)|$$

Recall $\theta_1(\phi)(\sigma; z; x)$ for $\sigma = \sigma_1$ as in (6.22) and $\theta(\phi_\mathbb{Z}) = \sum_{\alpha \in \mathbb{Z}}(w(g_{\alpha})) \phi_\mathbb{Z}(\alpha)$. The theta kernel $\theta_1(\phi)(\sigma; z; x)$ has values in $L_2^\times(n+1; \C)$ and is different from the harmonic theta differential form in Corollary 6.13.

By (6.1), we have $[j + \tau; x] = \mathfrak{j}(XX' + YY') + [\tau; x]$ for $\mathfrak{j} \in Z^\times$ and $\tau \in D_0^\pm$. Define

$$\phi^{(j)}(\tau; z) = \phi_\mathbb{Z}^{(j)}(z)(\mathfrak{j})^j e(\langle N(3\infty) \rangle \tau)$$

$$\phi^{(j)}(\tau; x) = \phi_\mathbb{Z}^{(j)}(\tau; x)^j e(\langle N(x) \rangle \tau).$$
We remark \( \pi(XX' + YY') = 0 \) for \( \pi : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \to L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \) in (6.29). Then we have

\[
(7.3) \quad \eta^{k/2} \theta(\phi)|_{O_\delta(\mathbb{A})} = \eta^{1+(n/2)} \theta(\phi) = \sum_{j=0}^{n+1} \binom{n+1}{j} (XX' + YY')^j \theta(\phi_j^Z) \theta(\phi_{n+1-j}^D).
\]

Recalling we have a twist by \( \eta^{1/2} \) in front of (6.6), we now study

\[
\eta^{(k+1)/2} \int_{O_\delta(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash O_\delta(\mathbb{A}) / \mathbb{F}_\delta} \theta(\phi)(g) d\mu_g = m \sum_{j=0}^{n+1} \binom{n+1}{j} (XX' + YY')^j \eta^{1/2} \theta(\phi_j^Z) E(\phi_{n+1-j}^D),
\]

where \( m \) is as in (4.23) and for \( \Phi \in S(D_0, \mathbb{A}) \) and \( g \in \text{Mp}(\mathbb{A}), \)

\[
E(\Phi) = \sum_{\gamma \in B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash SL_2(\mathbb{Q})} |a(g)|^{s-(1/2)} |w(\gamma g)\Phi(0)|_{s=\frac{1}{2}}.
\]

Since \( J'(YX' - XY') = XX' + YY' \), for \( \nabla \) in Case ID, by (5.7) and (5.8)

\[
(7.4) \quad ((n+1)!)^{-2} \nabla^{n+1} [j; \mathbf{x}]^{n+1-j} [g; \mathbf{x}^2] = \begin{cases} n+2 = k & \text{if } j = 0, \\ 0 & \text{if } j > 0. \end{cases}
\]

Take \( F = \sum_{m=1}^\infty a_m e(-m\tau) \in S^+_{-}(M, \psi^{-1} \chi_{D_\delta}) \) for \( M \) as in (4.26). Since \( (Z^+, \mathbb{Q}) \) is positive definite producing holomorphic \( \theta(\phi_k^2) \), \( F \) has to be anti-holomorphic. Since \( [g; \mathbf{x}]_{\mathbf{r}=0} = 0 \), in the same manner as getting (5.15) from (4.29) and (4.31), we obtain, for \( \mathcal{B} := B(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash B(\mathbb{A}) C_\infty / B(\mathbb{Z}) C_\infty, \)

\[
(7.5) \quad \sum_{j=0}^{n+1} \binom{n+1}{j} \int_{\mathcal{B}} F(\tau) \eta^{k+1/2} \theta(((n+1)!)^{-2} \nabla^{n+1} [j; \mathbf{x}]^{n+1-j} [g; \mathbf{x}^2]) (0) d\mu_\tau = \int_{\mathcal{B}} F(\tau) \theta((n+1)!)^{-2} \nabla^{n+1} [j; \mathbf{x}]^{n+1} [g; \mathbf{x}^2] (0) d\mu_\tau
\]

\[
= \int_{0}^{1} \int_{0}^{1} F(\tau) \theta((n+1)!)^{-2} \nabla^{n+1} [j; \mathbf{x}]^{n+1} [g; \mathbf{x}^2] d\xi \eta^{k-3/2} d\eta
\]

\[
= 2(4\pi)^{-k+1/2} \delta_{\pm}^{-1} |\Delta_\pm|^{-k+1/2} k \Gamma(k-\frac{1}{2}) \sum_{0 < m \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(n) a_m m^{-k}.
\]

Here \( \delta_{\pm}^{-1} |\Delta_\pm|^{-k+1/2} = -\sqrt{-1} \delta_{\pm}^{-1} \). Thus we get in the same manner as in Theorem 4.7

**Theorem 7.1.** Suppose that \( E \) is imaginary and that \( D \) is definite. Let \( F \) be a primitive Hecke eigenform in \( S^+_k(C, \psi^{-1} \chi_{D_\delta}) \) for \( |C| \in M \) with \( M \) as in (4.26) and \( f = \theta^*(F) \) be the theta lift:

\[
f(g; \mathbf{x}) = \int_{\Gamma_\mathfrak{r} \backslash \mathfrak{D}} \theta_k(\phi)(\tau; g, \mathbf{x}) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} d\xi d\eta.
\]

Choose \( \phi_{\mathfrak{r}}^{(\infty)} \) associated to Dirichlet character \( \psi \) of conductor \( C(\psi) \) as specified above and \( \phi_0^{(\infty)} \) as in (4.25). Let \( \phi \) be a Schwartz-Bruhat function of \( D_{\sigma, \mathbb{A}}^\times \) as in (7.1), and choose the measure \( d\mu_h \) on \( O_\delta(\mathbb{A}) \) as in Theorem 4.2. Then if \( f(g) \neq 0 \), for the mass \( m \) as in (4.23) and \( E^\pm(1) \) as in Theorem 4.7,

\[
(\zeta(2)) \int_{Sh_\delta} ((n+1)!)^{-2} \nabla^{n+1} f(h; \mathbf{x}) d\mu_h
\]

\[
= m E^\pm(1) \delta_{\pm}^{-1} |\Delta_\pm|^{-k+1/2} 2(4\pi)^{(1/2)} \Gamma(k-\frac{1}{2}) L^{(1)}(C_\psi) (1, Ad(F) \otimes \chi_E)
\]

for the compatible system \( \rho_F \) attached to \( F \) and \( \tilde{\Gamma}_\delta := \{ u \in \text{SO}_\delta(\mathbb{A}) | \phi^{(\infty)} \circ u = \phi^{(\infty)} \} \cong \tilde{R}(N_0)^\times / \mathbb{Z}^\times. \)

The Shimura subvariety \( Sh_\delta \) is as in (4.22).
7.2. **Theta descent.** In this subsection, the choice of the Bruhat function $\phi^{(\infty)}$ is arbitrary. Recall
$$
\Gamma = \Gamma_\phi := \{ \gamma \in \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}) = G_{D_\sigma}^+/Z_{G_{D_\sigma}}(\mathbb{Q}) | \phi^{(\infty)}(\gamma^{-1}x\gamma) = \phi^{(\infty)}(x) \text{ for all } x \in D_{\sigma, A}(\mathbb{Q}) \}.
$$

Identifying $D_{E_h}^\chi = \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C})$, from (6.38), a quaternionic modular form $f(h; s) : D^\chi \setminus D_{E_h}^\chi \to L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ ($k = n + 2$ and $n^* = 2n + 2$) on $\widetilde{\Gamma}$ of weight $k\chi + k\sigma\sigma$ satisfies
$$
f(\gamma x u_\infty; s) = f(x; s^t u_\infty^t) \quad \text{for} \quad u_\infty \in \widetilde{\Gamma} : \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}), z \in E_h^\chi \quad \text{and} \quad \gamma \in D_{E_h}^\chi.
$$

where $u_\infty^\chi = u_\infty^{-1}$ if $\sigma = \sigma_1$ and $u_\infty$ if $\sigma = \sigma_2$. Here $\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) = \{ u \in \mathbb{H}^\chi | N(u) = 1 \}$ is the stabilizer in $\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ of $\varepsilon = -J \in \mathcal{H}$, and $u \in \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{A})$ acts on $P(s) \in L(n^*; A)$ by $P(u) = P(su)$.

Recall the projection $\pi : L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C}) \to L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ of $\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$-modules in (6.30) given by
$$
x = (X, Y, X', Y') \mapsto \bar{x} := (T, -S; S, T).
$$

By convention, we write $\pi(\Phi(x)) = \Phi(\bar{x})$. Recall also, for $u \in \mathbb{H}^1 = \text{Ker}(N : \mathbb{H}^\chi \to \mathbb{R})$,
$$
u^{-1}[\bar{x}]D_{\sigma} = u \cdot (\pi[x]D) \quad \text{and} \quad h^{-1}[\bar{x}]Dh = h \cdot (\pi[x]D) \quad \text{for} \quad h \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}).
$$

Recall the adjoint $\pi^* : L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \to L_E(n + 1; \mathbb{C})$ of $\pi$ which is an embedding of $\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$-modules. Write $\pi^*\{f(g; s)\}$ as $f(g; s^*\gamma)$ (for $s^*$ as in (6.37)). Thus $h \cdot \pi^*(f(g; s^*)) = f(g; s^*h)$ for $h \in \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{E})$.

Recall the pairings $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle = \langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle_{n+1}$ and $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ defined in §6.6. Restricting $f$ in (7.6) to $G_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A}) \subset D_{E_h}^\chi$ and taking the measure $d\mu_h$ with $\int_{\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})} d\mu_h = 1$ and $d\mu_h|_\mathcal{H} = y^{-3}|dy \wedge dx \wedge d\sigma|$ on $\text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus \text{SO}_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A})$, we define the theta descent $\Theta_\mathcal{H}(f)(\tau)$ by
$$
\Theta_\mathcal{H}(f)(\tau) := \int_{\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})} (\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x), f(h; s^*))d\mu_h.
$$

For $h \in G_{D_\sigma}^+(\mathbb{R})$ and $u \in \widetilde{\Gamma} : \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$,
$$
(\theta(\phi)(\tau; hu; x), f(hu; s^*)) = (\theta(\phi)(\tau; hu; \bar{x}^t u_\infty^t), f(hu; s^t u_\infty^t)) = (\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x), f(h; s^*))
$$
by (6.9) and (7.6). Thus $\langle \theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x), f(h; s^*) \rangle = \langle \theta(\phi)(\tau; g_z; x), f(g_z; s^*) \rangle$ for $z = h(\varepsilon) \in \mathcal{H}$, and $h \mapsto (\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x), f(h; s^*))$ factors through $\mathcal{H} = \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})/\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$. We know $(P(Xh), Q(s^*h)) = \det(h^\mathcal{H}t^{\sigma+1})(P(x), Q(s^*))$.

Recall $h^\mathcal{H} = h^\gamma$ in Case II and $h^\mathcal{H} = h^\gamma$ in Case ID for $h \in G^+_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{A})$. Even if we are working in Case ID in this section, many formulas here are valid in Case II under the action $h \mapsto h^\gamma$; so, we use this notation $h^\gamma$ to indicate the formula valid in the two cases. Then
$$
(\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; xh^{-\gamma} x^{-1}), f(h; s^*h^{-\gamma} \gamma)) = \det(h^\mathcal{H}t^{\sigma+1})(\theta(\phi)(\tau; h; x), f(h; s^*)).
$$

Since $\det(g_z) = 1$, this shows $(\theta(\phi)(\tau; g_z; x), f(g_z; s^*)) = (\theta(\phi)(\tau; g_z; xg_z^{-\gamma}), f(g_z; s^* g_z^{-\gamma}))$. In sum
$$
\Theta_\mathcal{H}(f)(\tau) := \int_{\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})} (\theta(\phi)(\tau; g_z; xg_z^{-\gamma}), f(g_z; s^* g_z^{-\gamma}))d\mu_z,
$$
where $d\mu_z = y^{-3}|dy \wedge dx \wedge d\sigma|$.

Note $u_\infty^\gamma = u_\infty^t$ for $u_\infty \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \subset G^+_{D_\sigma}(\mathbb{R})$. By $f(hu_\infty; s^*h^{-\gamma}u_\infty^t) = f(h; s^*h^{-\gamma}u_\infty^t u_\infty^t) = f(h; s^*h^{-\gamma})$ for $u_\infty \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$, we find that $h \mapsto f(h; s^*h^{-\gamma})$ factors through $D^\chi \setminus D_{E_h}^\chi/\text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$. Thus $f(z; s^*) := f(g_z; s^* g_z^{-\gamma})$ is a well defined function on $\mathcal{H}$. We have for $\gamma \in \Gamma_\phi$ writing $g_z = g_{\gamma(z)} u$ with $u \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})$,
$$
f(z; s^* \gamma^{-\gamma}) = f(g_z; s^* (\gamma g_z)^{-\gamma}) = f(g_{\gamma(z)} u; s^* (g_{\gamma(z)} u)^{-\gamma}) = f(g_{\gamma(z)} s^* g_{\gamma(z)}^{-\gamma}) = f(\gamma(z), s^*).
$$
This formula also applies to \( \theta(\tau; z; x) := \theta(\tau; g_x; xg_x^{-1}) \) in place of \( f(g; s^*) \):

\[
(7.10) \quad \theta(\tau; z; x\gamma^{-1}) = \theta(\tau; \gamma(z), x).
\]

By (6.2): \([g_x^{-1}\alpha g_x^\gamma; xg_x^{-1}] = [\alpha; x]\), and by definition

\[
(7.11) \quad \theta(\tau; z; x) = \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi^\infty} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) |[\alpha; x]|^{n+1} \text{e}(\pm N(\alpha) \xi + \frac{\eta \theta [g_x^{-1}\alpha g_x^\gamma]}{2} \sqrt{-1}).
\]

7.3. Vanishing of Fourier coefficients of \( e(N(\alpha)\tau) \) when \( D_{\alpha,\mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H} \). Since \( G_{D_{\alpha}}^+ \subset D_{\alpha}^\infty \) and \( D_{E}^\infty \) satisfies the strong approximation theorem, we have \( G_{D_{\alpha}}^+(\mathbb{A}) = \bigcup_{\alpha \in A} G_{D_{\alpha}}^+(\mathbb{Q})a \Gamma G_{D_{\alpha}}^+(\mathbb{R}) \) for a finite set \( A = A_{G,\phi} \) on which the reduced norm map induces a bijection \( N : A_G \cong \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \rightarrow (\mathbb{Z}^\times / (\mathbb{Z}^\times)^2 (\mathbb{Z}^\times) \cap Q^\times) \). Since \( SO_{D_{\alpha}} = G_{D_{\alpha}}^+ / Z G_{D_{\alpha}}^+ \), we can choose a finite set \( \mathcal{A} = A_{\phi} \subset SO_{D_{\alpha}}(\hat{\mathbb{A}}^{(\infty)}) \) such that \( N : A_{\phi} \cong \hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times \rightarrow (\hat{\mathbb{Z}}^\times)^2 (\mathbb{Z}^\times) \cap Q^\times \)

\[
SO_{D_{\alpha}}(\hat{\mathbb{A}}^{(\infty)}) = \bigsqcup_{\alpha \in \mathcal{A}} SO_{D_{\alpha}}(\mathbb{Q})a \hat{\Gamma}_{\phi}.
\]

If \( \phi \) is as in Theorem 7.1, \( \hat{\Gamma}_{\phi} \supset \hat{\mathbb{R}}(N_{\phi})^\times \) and hence \( A_{\phi} = \{1\} \). We thus assume \( \mathcal{A} = \{1\} \). Then we have for \( k = n + 2 \) and a fundamental domain \( F \) of \( \Gamma_{\phi} \) in \( \mathcal{H} \). In the following computation, to treat Case ID and Case II uniformly, we put \( \tau_D = \tau \) in Case ID, \( \tau_I = \tau \) in Case II, \( \eta_I = \eta \) in Case ID and \( \eta_I = -\eta \) in Case II uniformly. This \( \eta = -\eta \) is to present the following computation uniformly in the two cases ID and II as (6.18) and (6.21) has an opposite sign in front of \([z; v]2/y(z)^2 \). Using (6.18) in Case ID and (6.21) in Case II, we compute (recalling \( h^I = h^I \) in Case II and \( h^? = th \) in Case ID)

\[
(7.12) \quad \theta_{\tau}(f)(\tau) \overset{(7.11),(6.18),(6.21)}{=} \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi^\infty / \Gamma_{\phi}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \times \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\phi}} \int_{F} \left( [\gamma^{-1}z^\alpha \gamma^\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*) \right) \text{e}(\pm N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{[z; \gamma^{-1}z^\alpha \gamma^\alpha]2\eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2} \right) d\mu_z
\]

\[
\overset{(6.17)}{=} \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi^\infty / \Gamma_{\phi}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\phi}} \int_{F} \left( [\alpha; x\gamma^\alpha]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*) \right) \text{e}(\pm N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{[\gamma(z); \alpha^2\eta \sqrt{-1}]}{2y(\gamma(z))^2} \right) d\mu_z
\]

\[
= \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi^\infty / \Gamma_{\phi}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\phi}} \int_{F} \left( [\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*) \right) \text{e}(\pm N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{[\gamma(z); \alpha^2\eta \sqrt{-1}]}{2y(\gamma(z))^2} \right) d\mu_z
\]

\[
\overset{(7.9)}{=} \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\phi^\infty / \Gamma_{\phi}} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma_{\phi}} \int_{F} \left( [\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*) \right) \text{e}(\pm N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{[\gamma(z); \alpha^2\eta \sqrt{-1}]}{2y(\gamma(z))^2} \right) d\mu_z
\]

If \( D_{\alpha,\mathbb{R}} = j^{-1}\mathbb{H} j \) \( (\Leftrightarrow \alpha = j^{-1}j^\sigma \) up to non-zero scalars \( ) \) for \( j \in SL_2(\mathbb{C}) \), writing \( \overset{\approx}{=} \) for the equality up to non-zero scalars,

\[
([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) \overset{\approx}{=} ([j^{-1}j^\sigma; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) = ([1; xj^\sigma]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) = ([1; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*j^{-1})).
\]
The constant is given by $\sqrt{-1}$ for $\epsilon = (1 \mp 1)/2$ for the parity of $D^+_{\sigma}$. Then noting $|\Gamma_\alpha| < \infty$,

$$
(7.13) \quad \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta_s \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z
$$

$$
= |\Gamma_\alpha|^{-1} \int_{\mathcal{H}} (\Gamma^{-1}(z; x)^{n+1}, f(j^{-1}(z); s^*; j^{-1})) e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|j^{-1}(z); :\sigma|^2 \eta_s \sqrt{-1}|}{2y(j^{-1}(z))^2}) d\mu_z
$$

$$
\approx |\Gamma_\alpha|^{-1} \int_{\mathcal{H}} (\Gamma^{-1}(z; x)^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta_s \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z.
$$

**Proposition 7.2.** Suppose $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H}$. Then in Cases ID and II, we have

$$
\int_{\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) e(\pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta_s \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z = 0.
$$

**Proof.** Under $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H}$, $\alpha \doteq j x j^{-\alpha}$ for $j \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ and $x = 1$ if $D_{\mathbb{R}} \cong \mathbb{H}$ and $x = J$ if $D_{\mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$. Here "&quot; means up to a power of $\sqrt{-1}$. Then

$$
[\alpha; x] = [j x j^{-\sigma}; x] = [x; x j^{-1}],
$$

and $([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) \doteq ([x; x]^{n+1}, f|_{\mathcal{H}}^{-1}(x; s^*)) = 0$ by Lemma 6.10. \hfill \Box

**7.4. Computation of Fourier coefficients of $e(\pm N(\alpha) \tau)$ when $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$.** We now assume that $D$ is definite and $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$.

We first interpret

$$
\int_{\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z
$$

as an integral of differential form. In this case $|\Gamma_\alpha| = \infty$ with finite volume $\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})$. By (7.12)

$$
(7.14) \quad \theta_s(f)(\tau) = \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D^+_\sigma / \Gamma_\sigma} \phi((\alpha) \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z.
$$

Let $S_\alpha := \Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}$. We consider $\Theta_\alpha(\phi; \tau; z; x) \in H^0(S_\alpha, L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{S_\alpha/n})$ as in Corollary 6.13 and $\omega_\alpha(f)(z; s^*) := i_1(f(g_z; s)) \in H^0(S_\alpha, L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{S_\alpha/n})$ for a cusp form $f$ on $\Gamma = \Gamma_\phi$ as in (M1–3) in §6.1. Here $i_\nu : L_{E}(n+1; \mathbb{C}) \to L_{E}(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^\nu_{S/n} \mathbb{C}$ is as in Proposition 6.12, and we write $i_0 : \mathbb{C} \cong \mathcal{O}_S$ for the constant inclusion for the structure sheaf $\mathcal{O}_S$ of the real 3-dimensional analytic manifold $S$.

We get from (7.14) and Lemma 6.14 combined with Proposition 7.2

$$
(7.15) \quad \eta^{-1/2} \theta_s(f)(\tau) = \sum_{\alpha \in D^+_\sigma / \Gamma_\sigma} \phi((\alpha) \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \setminus \mathcal{H}} y(z)[i_{\nu,s}(\alpha; x)^{n+1}, i_{3-\nu,s}(f(z; s^*))] e(N(\alpha) \tau_s \pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}) d\mu_z.
$$

Choose $j \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ as in Lemma 6.7 so that $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = j^{-1}M_2(\mathbb{R})j$, where $\alpha = j^{-1}j^+j^{\sigma_j}$ with $j^+ = \sqrt{-1}$ if $\alpha \in D^+_\sigma$ and $j^- = J$ if $\alpha \in D^-_{\sigma}$.

Assuming $D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})$, we need to compute

$$
(7.16) \quad I^\pm := \int_{\mathcal{H}} y(z)[i_{\nu,s}(\alpha; x)^{n+1}, i_{3-\nu,s}(f(z; s^*)] e(\pm \frac{|z; :\alpha|^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}),
$$

as $I^\pm$ is the coefficient of $e(\pm N(\alpha) \tau)$. Here $f|_{\mathcal{H}}^{-1}$ is as in (6.39). We also note

$$
(7.17) \quad \pm N(\alpha) = \pm N(j^{-1}j^+j^{\sigma_j}) < 0.
$$
which is consistent with \( \mp \Im(\pm i) > 0 \). By (6.1) in Case ID, we have \([J; x] = YX' - XY'\); so,
\[ g(z)[i_{\nu, \ast}(f)_{(g^{-1}(g_0; s)^\ast})] = g(z)[i_{\nu, \ast}((YX' - XY')^{\ast} + 1)], i_{3-\nu, \ast}(f)_{(g^{-1}(g_0; s)^\ast)} \] .

First suppose \( n = 0 \). Then writing \( x = u + v\sqrt{-1} \), by Proposition 6.12
\begin{equation}
(7.18) \quad i_{\nu, \ast}((YX' - XY')\ast) = \begin{cases} 
-2\sqrt{-1}y^{-1}dv & \text{if } \nu = 1, \\
2y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) & \text{if } \nu = 2.
\end{cases}
\end{equation}

Since \( L_E(0; C) = C \) and \( L_E(1; C) = CSS' + CST' + CCS' + CCT' \), the function
\begin{equation}
(7.19) \quad f^j(g; s) := f[j^{-1}(g_0; s) = f(j^{-1}g_0; s) : j^{-1}SL_2(C) \to L(2; C) = CS^2 + CST + CT^2
\end{equation}
has the form \( f^j(g; s) = f_0^j(YY' - XX') - f_2^jYX' \). Therefore
\begin{equation}
(7.20) \quad i_{\nu, \ast}(f^j(g; s)) = \begin{cases} 
-f_0^j y^{-1}dx + f_2^j y^{-1}dx & \text{if } \nu = 1, \\
-f_0^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) + 2f_2^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) - f_2^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) & \text{if } \nu = 2.
\end{cases}
\end{equation}

and applying this to \( n = 0, s^* = (YX', (YY' - XX')/2, -YX') \). Thus we have \( f^j(g; s^*) = f_0^jXY' + f_2^j(Y) \). Therefore
\begin{equation}
(7.21) \quad i_{2, \ast}(f^j(g; s^*)|_{\delta}) = -f_0^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) + 2f_2^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) - f_2^j y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) = j^* \omega_2(f).
\end{equation}

Identifying \( \mathcal{H} = \mathfrak{h} \times \mathbb{R} \) by \( z \mapsto (u + y\sqrt{-1}, v) \), we get from (7.18),
\begin{equation}
(7.22) \quad y(z)[i_{\nu, \ast}((YX' - XY')\ast)] = -(f_0^j + f_2^j) y^{-2} dy \wedge dx \wedge dx = 2\sqrt{-1}((f_0^j + f_2^j) y^{-2} dy \wedge du \wedge dv = -2\sqrt{-1} j^* \omega_2(f)|_{\delta} \wedge dv
\end{equation}
which is independent of \( \nu = 1, 2 \).

Write \( \Gamma_\alpha := j^{\alpha, -1} \in SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \). Then \( \Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H} = \Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathfrak{h} \times \mathbb{R} \) by \( z \mapsto (u + y\sqrt{-1}, v) \). This shows \( SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \mathcal{H} \cong \mathbb{R} \). By (6.17), we have
\[ \left[ \frac{z; h^{-1} h^{-1} \sigma_j^2}{2y(z)^2} \right] = \left[ \frac{h(z); v^2}{2y(h(z))^2} \right] \quad \text{and} \quad \left[ \frac{z; h^{-1} J h^{-1} \sigma_j^2}{2y(z)^2} \right] = \left[ \frac{h(z); J}{2y(h(z))^2} \right]. \]

as \( h^{-1} J h = h^{-1} J h^{-1} h J = J \) for \( h \in SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \). This shows that the function \( z \mapsto e^{\pm \sqrt{-1} Iz^2 y^2} \) factors through \( SL_2(\mathbb{R}) \backslash \mathfrak{h} \).

Recall \( p_+(z) = \frac{z + \sqrt{z^2 - 4y}}{2y} \) and \( \text{Tr}_{D(C)}(p_+(z)v^2) \) as in (6.16) for \( \vartheta = -1 \). Thus \( \left[ z; J \right] = y(x - x) = -2\sqrt{-1} yv, \) and \( e^{\pm \sqrt{-1} Iz^2 y^2} \) is as in Lemma 6.11 and \( \omega \) is with respect to the factor \( L_E(n; C) \) (acting trivially the factor \( L_E(1; C) \)). The down-to-earth explicit form of \( n!^{-2} \gamma\ast(f)(g; s^*) \) can be found in [H99, page 141].
We decompose $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{H}_1 \times \mathcal{H}_2$ by $z \mapsto (u + iy, v)$.
By\ (5.7), $n!^{-2} \nabla^n [J; g] = (n + 1)$. Then we get, for $P_n(f)$ in (6.44),
\[
I^\pm = c_{\pm, n} \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \mathcal{H}} e(2v^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}) \, dv \cdot \int_{\text{P}^1(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})(c)} (f_0^l + f_2^l) y^{-2} \, dy \wedge du
\]
\[
= c_{\pm, n} \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \mathcal{H}} e(2v^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}) \, dv \cdot P_n(f).
\]
where $c_{+, n} = 2\sqrt{-1^n} (n + 1)$ and $c_{-, n} = -2\sqrt{-1} (n + 1)$. The power of $\sqrt{-1}$ comes from
\[\sqrt{-1} J; x]^{n+1} = \sqrt{-1}^n [J; x]\]
as $\sqrt{-1} J \in D_+^{*}, \mathbb{R}$, while $J \in D_-^{*}, \mathbb{R}$. As is well known\ [HMI, (2.5.5)], we have
\[
\int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \setminus \mathcal{H}} e(2v^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}) \, dv \cdot \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp(-4\pi \eta v^2) \, dv = 2\eta^{-1/2}.
\]
Thus
\[
(7.25) \quad I^\pm = 2c_{\pm, n} \eta^{-1/2} \cdot P_n(f).
\]
Thus we conclude

**Theorem 7.3.** Suppose that $f : \mathcal{H} \to L(n^*; \mathbb{C})$ is a cusp form on $\text{SO}_{n}(\mathbb{A})$ of weight $k = n + 2 \geq 2$
satisfying (M1–3) in §6.1 for $\Gamma = \Gamma_\phi$ with an arbitrary $\phi(\infty)$. Then we have
\[
\theta_* (f) = 2c_{\pm, n} \sum_{\alpha \in D_+^{*}/T_\alpha, D_\phi} \phi(\infty)(\alpha) P_n(f)e(\pm N(\alpha) \tau),
\]
where $c_{+, n} = 2\sqrt{-1^n} (n + 1)$ and $c_{-, n} = -2\sqrt{-1} (n + 1)$ and $P_n(f)$ as in (6.44).

8. **Indefinite $D$ with $E$ Imaginary**

In this section, we assume that $D$ is indefinite. We regard $\mathcal{S} = \text{SO}_{n}(\mathbb{Q}) \setminus \text{SO}_{n}(\mathbb{A})/\Gamma_\phi$ as the automorphic manifold of $G_+^{*}$ and $D_E^{*}$ for the derived group $D_E^{*}$ so that $D_E^{*}$.

8.1. **Analytic theta differential form.** For each $f(g; x) \in M_k(\Gamma)$, we pick $g \in \text{O}_D^{*}(\mathbb{R})$ with $z = g(\in) \in \mathcal{H}$ and define as in\ [H94, §2.2] $f_\infty (z; x) = f(g; xj(\in, \in))$. For $u \in \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R})^\infty$,\ (8.1)
\[
f_\infty (g \in, x) = f(g \in, xj(g, \in)) = f (g, xj(u, \in) \in, j(g, \in)) = f (g, xj(g, \in)).
\]
At the end of\ [H94, §2.2], there is a typographical error, and “$f(z, j(\gamma, z)xj_j(\gamma, z)\in)$” should be
$\overline{f(z, j(\gamma, z)x)}j_j(\gamma, z)^m$. Here the left action $x \mapsto j(\gamma, z)x$ is replaced by the left action
$x \mapsto xj(\gamma, z)$. So $f_\infty (z; x)$ is well-defined independent of the choice of $g$ with $g(\in) = z$.

We compute $\nabla^n \Theta (x; g) (g \in \text{SO}_D(\mathbb{R}))$ for $\Theta$ as in Corollary 6.13, where $\nabla = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial X^2} - \frac{\partial^2}{\partial Y^2}$. Note\ \([a \ b \ c \ d] : x = dYX' + bXX' - cYX' - aXX', and for $v = j_1 + x$ with $j_1 = (0 \ 1) \text{ and } r = (\frac{a}{c} \frac{b}{c})$,\ \([v; x] = \frac{j_1}{j_1} : x = y(YX' - XY'') - a(YX' + XY') + bXX' - cYX').

Note\ \([v; x] = \frac{g'vg}{x} : g \in G_+^{*}(\mathbb{R}) = D_\infty \text{ and } \nabla^n [v; x] = N(g)g^n \nabla^n [v; x] [H94, page 498]. If $D$ is a division algebra, we can choose always $(g, g) \in (D \otimes \mathbb{C})^\infty = \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C}) \times \text{GL}_2(\mathbb{C})$ so that $g^{-1} v g = \text{diag}(a, -a)$. Since we can find $g$ so that $g^{-1} v g = \text{diag}(a, -a)$ for $r$ in a Zariski open non-empty subset of $D_0$ and the function $\nabla^n [v; x] = x$ is a polynomial in $v$, we may assume that $v = j_1 + \text{diag}(a, -a)$ to compute $\nabla^n [v; x] = x$. Since $[\text{diag}(a, -a) : x] = -a(YX' + XY')$, we have
\[
[v; x] = \left(3(YX' - XY'') - a(YX' + XY')\right)^n = n \sum_{j=0}^{n} (\frac{n}{j}) (-a)^j (3 - a)^{n-j} (YX')^{n-j} (XY')^j.
\]
By [H99, page 141], we have \((n!)^{-2} \varphi^n[(YX')^{n-j}(XY'')] = (-1)^j (n^j) \), and hence,

\[
(n!)^{-2} \varphi^n \left(\binom{j+a}{j} \right) \cdot x^n = \sum_{j=0}^{n} (j+a)^{n-j} (j-a)^j = (j+a)^n \sum_{j=0}^{n} \left( \frac{1}{j+a} \right)^j = \frac{1}{(n+1)} \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) (j)^{n-2j} a^{2j}.
\]

Since \((n!)^{-2} \varphi^n \left(\binom{j+a}{j} \right) \cdot x^n\) depends only on \(j\) and \(N(p) = -a^2\) (as \(\text{Tr}(p) = 0\)), this implies

\[
(8.2) \quad (n!)^{-2} \varphi^n [j_2 + x; x]^n = \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) (j)^{n-2j} N(p)^j.
\]

In view of Corollary 6.13, we need to compute for \(i_\nu\) in (6.42)

\[
i_\nu \circ [j_2 + x; x] = i_\nu ([j_2 + x; x] + [x; x]) = j(YX' - XY') - a(YX' + XY') + bXX' - cYY'.
\]

Since \(\text{Ker}(i_\nu) = \mathbb{C}(XX' + YY')\), writing \(XX' = \frac{1}{2}((XX' + YY') + (XX' - YY'))\) and \(YY' = \frac{1}{2}((XX' + YY') - (XX' - YY'))\), we have from (6.41)

\[
(8.3) \quad i_\nu \circ [j_2 + x; x] = i_\nu ((j - a)YX' + (j + a)(-XY') + \frac{b}{2}(XX' - YY') + \frac{c}{2}(XX' - YY'))
\]

\[
= \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
(3 + a(y)^{-1} dx - (3 - a)(y)^{-1} dy & \text{if } \nu = 1, \\
(3 - a(y)^{-1} dx + (3 + a)(y)^{-1} dy & \text{if } \nu = 2.
\end{array} \right.
\]

Since \(D_1^\infty \to D_{E_{R_\infty}}^\infty\) induces \(\delta \ni x + iy \mapsto (\frac{x}{y}, \frac{y}{x}) \in \mathcal{H}\) with \(x \in \mathbb{R}\), we find

\[
(8.4) \quad i_\nu \circ [j_2 + x; x]|_{\delta} = \left\{ \begin{array}{ll}
2ay^{-1} dy + \frac{b+c}{2} y^{-1} dy & \text{if } \nu = 1, \\
2b(y^{-2} dy \wedge dx) & \text{if } \nu = 2.
\end{array} \right.
\]

Recall (6.11)

\[
\theta(\tau; z; x) = \theta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_2^\infty} \phi(\infty)(\alpha)(\alpha; xg) e(\pm N(\alpha) \xi + \frac{\eta P \xi}{2} \sqrt{-1}).
\]

As before, we decompose \(D_2^\infty = Z^\pm \oplus D_2^\infty\) so that \(Z^\pm = \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{Z} \subset D_2^\infty\) with \(Q(x) = x^2\) and \(L_Z = N \sqrt{-1} \mathbb{Z}\). To compute the factorization of \(P|_{[j_2 + x; x]}\), we write \(v_\infty = (\frac{a}{\sqrt{-1} c}, \frac{b}{\sqrt{-1} c})\) as in (3.3). Then \(\delta = \frac{1}{2} \text{Tr}(x_\infty)\) and \(x = (\frac{a}{\sqrt{-1} c}, \frac{b}{\sqrt{-1} c})\), so \(v_\infty = (\frac{a + \sqrt{-1} t}{\sqrt{-1} c}, \frac{b - \sqrt{-1} t}{\sqrt{-1} c})\) where \(a, b, c \in \mathbb{R}\). Thus \(P v_\infty / 2 = \frac{a^2 + b^2}{2} + c^2\) and \(N(v_\infty) = \frac{a^2 + b^2}{2} - bc\). This shows \(P_Z = P|_{z = [N]|z}\) and \(P = N \oplus P_0\) for \(P_0 = P|_{D_0}\) which is a positive majorant of \(s\). Thus we have a factorization

\[
e(\pm N(\xi) \xi + \frac{\eta P \xi}{2}) \sqrt{-1} = e(\pm N(\xi) \xi + \frac{\eta P \xi}{2}) \xi \sqrt{-1} e(\pm N(\xi) \xi + \frac{\eta P \xi}{2}) \xi \sqrt{-1}.
\]

Suppose that \(\phi(\xi) = \phi_0(\xi) \otimes \phi_0(\xi)\) and \(\phi_0 \in S(\mathcal{Z}_z(\alpha))\) and \(\phi_0 \in S(D_0, \mathcal{Z}_z(\alpha))\). Define for \(g \in D_2^\infty\) with \(g(\xi) = z \in \mathcal{S} \subset \mathcal{H}\),

\[
\theta_j(\phi(\alpha))(\tau) = \sum_{\alpha \in Z} \phi_0(\alpha) \alpha^j e(\pm N(\alpha) \xi + \frac{\eta P \xi}{2} \sqrt{-1} - 1).
\]

Since \(\mathcal{O} \cong L_E(1; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \mathcal{O}_{\mathcal{S}}\) and the differential operator \(n!^{-2} \varphi^n\) acts on the factor \([v; x]^n\) of \(e(\xi)^n \otimes [v; s]_{\mathcal{S}}\) under the notation of (6.11), the factor \([v; s]\) \((v = j_2 + x)\) is sent to \(2y^{-2} dy \wedge dx\) over \(S_{H_0}\) by (8.3).
Proposition 8.1. Let the assumption and notation be as above. Suppose that \( \nu = 2 \). Then for the image \( \text{Sh}_S \) of \( (\Gamma_0 \cap D^\times) \setminus \mathfrak{H} \) in \( \Gamma_0 \setminus \mathfrak{H} \), writing \( z = x + iy \) and \( \bar{\pi} = x - iy \) for the variable on \( \text{Sh}_S \),

\[
(n!)^{-2}\nu^n\Theta(\phi)(\tau; z)|_{\text{Sh}_S} = 2\eta^{1/2} \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \theta_{n-2j+1}(\phi^{(\infty)}_Z)(\tau) \theta_j(\phi^{(\infty)}_0)(\tau; z) y^{-2} dy \wedge dx
\]

\[
= \sqrt{-1}\eta^{1/2} \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \theta_{n-2j+1}(\phi^{(\infty)}_Z)(\tau) \theta_j(\phi^{(\infty)}_0)(\tau; z) y^{-2} dz \wedge d\bar{\pi},
\]

which is an analytic 2-form on \( \text{Sh}_S \).

Here we have \( \theta_{n-2j+1} \) in place of \( \theta_{n-2j} \) because of (8.4).

To prove Proposition 8.1, we used the realization of the sheaf \( L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \) (the quotient by \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \)-action). In \([H94]\), we used \( L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \) (the quotient by \( \Gamma_0 \)-action). Of course the outcome is the same but the use of \( \tilde{L}_E \) is more complicated. Here is a brief outline of the use of \( \tilde{L}_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \) without the computation of its image under \((n!)^{-2}\nu^n\). For \( \gamma \in \Gamma_0 \), we have \( \theta(\phi)(\tau; \gamma g; x) = \theta(\gamma; g; x) \).

Then again the remark after (8.1) applies again and \( \tilde{t}(\gamma, z) \) in \([H94]\) is replaced by \( \tilde{t}(\gamma, z) \).

Remark 8.2. Regard \( L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) = L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) = \sum_{j=0}^{n^*} \mathbb{C} S^j T^j \) as a \( \text{SU}_2(\mathbb{R}) \) module for the coordinate vector \( s^* = t(S^0, S^1 T, \cdots, T^{n^*}) \), and define the matrix expression \( \rho_{n^*}(g) \) of symmetric \( n^* \)-power by

\[
\rho_{n^*} \left( \begin{array}{cc} a & b \\ c & d \end{array} \right) s^{n^*} = t(aS + bT, cS + dT)^{n^*}.
\]

Now following \([H94], (2.8a–e)\), we express \( \theta(\gamma; g; x) = \theta(\tau; g; x) = \theta(\tau; g; x) \in O_{D_n}^+(\mathbb{R}) \rightarrow L(n^*; \mathbb{C}) \) as \( \left\{ \theta_j : O_{D_n}^+(\mathbb{R}) \rightarrow L_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \right\}_{j=0, \ldots, n^*} \) by \( \sum_j S_j T_j \theta_j(\tau; g; x) = \theta(\tau; g; x) \cdot s^{n^*} \) via the coordinate \( s^{n^*} \).

Take the polynomial column vector \( \Psi(x; a) \in \mathbb{Z}[X, Y, X', Y', A, B]^{n^*} \) as in \([H94], (2.8a–b)\) and put \( \theta(\tau; g; x; a) = \sum_{j=0}^{n^*} \theta_j(\tau; g; x) A_j B_j = \theta(\tau; g; x) \cdot \Psi(x; a) \). Then we define a differential form with values in \( \tilde{L}_E(n; \mathbb{C}) \otimes \Omega^2_{\mathbb{R}/\mathbb{C}} \) by

\[
\tilde{\Theta}(\tau; z; x) = y^{-1}(\theta(0))(\tau; g; x) dy \wedge dx - 2\theta(1)(\tau; g; x) dx \wedge d\bar{z} + \theta(2)(\tau; g; x) dy \wedge d\bar{\tau}
\]

for \( g \in O_{D_n}^+(\mathbb{R}) \) with \( g(z) = z \). Then we have by \([H94], Proposition 2.1]\)

\[
\tilde{\Theta}(\tau; z; x) = \theta(\tau; \gamma; z; x) \in \mathbb{Z}[X, Y, X', Y', A, B]^{n^*} \text{ as in } [H94, (2.8a–b)].
\]

The direct computation of \( \nabla^n \tilde{\Theta}(\tau; g; x) \) is more involved, and anyway \( \nabla^n \tilde{\Theta} = \nabla^n \Theta \) as they have values in the constant sheaf; so from Proposition 8.1 we omit the details.

8.2. Siegel–Weil formula in the indefinite imaginary case. We now assume that \( D \) is an indefinite quaternion algebra over \( \mathbb{Q} \). Recall the decomposition \( D^\times = Z^\pm \oplus D^\times_\mathfrak{p} \) so that \( Z^\pm = \delta_q \mathbb{Q} \subset D^\times_\mathfrak{p} \) with \( Q(x) = x^2 \) and \( L_Z = N\delta_q \mathbb{Z} \). We take \( \phi^{(\infty)}_\psi \) := \( \psi \) on \( L_Z^\times / L_Z = N^{-1} \mathbb{Z} / N \mathbb{Z} \) for a Dirichlet character \( \psi : \mathbb{Z} / N \mathbb{Z} \rightarrow \mathbb{C} \). We take an Eichler order \( R_E(N_0) \) in \( D_E \) for \( N_0 \) prime to \( \delta \). Then let \( \phi^{(\infty)}_\mathfrak{p} \in S(D_0, \mathfrak{p}(\infty)) \) be as in (4.25) for the characteristic function \( \phi^{(\infty)}_\mathfrak{p} \) of \( \hat{L} := \hat{R}_E(0) \cap D_{0, \mathfrak{p}(\infty)} \). Again Remark 4.5 applies. We put \( \phi^{(\infty)} = \psi \equiv \phi^{(\infty)}_\mathfrak{p} \) and

\[
\phi(v) := \phi^{(\infty)}(v(\infty)) |v_{\infty}; x|^{n+1} e(\pm N(v_{\infty}) \xi + \frac{P_1[v(\infty)]}{2} \eta \sqrt{-1})
\]

for \( P_1(x, y) \) as in (6.4). Note

\[
r_{L}(g r) L_Z(g) (\tilde{\Theta}_L(\xi \sqrt{-1}) = \eta(1 + 2\xi)^{-1/2} \sqrt{-1} \xi e(\pm N(\xi) \xi + |N(\xi)\eta \sqrt{-1})
\]

\[
r_{D_0}(g r) L_D(g) (N(\eta)^{1/2} e(N(\eta) \sqrt{-1})) = \eta^{1/2} N(\eta)^{1/2} e(\pm N(\eta) \xi + \frac{P_0(g^{-1} \eta)}{2} \eta \sqrt{-1})
\]

for \( P_0 = P_1|_{D_0} \). Recall again \( \theta(\phi^{(\infty)}_\mathfrak{p} \mathfrak{p}^2) \) as

\[
\sum_{a \in Z} (w(g r) \phi^{(\infty)}_\mathfrak{p} \mathfrak{p}^2) (a).
\]
By Proposition 8.1, \((n!)^{-2} \nabla^n \Theta(\phi)(\tau; z)|_{S_{\delta}}\) is equal to
\[
2\eta^{1/2} \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \theta_{n-2j+1}(\phi_\infty^Z)(\tau) \theta_j(\phi_0^\infty)(\tau; z) y^{-2} \, dy \wedge dx,
\]
and therefore it is equal to
\[
(8.8) \quad 2\eta^{1/2} \eta^{-1-(n/2)} \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \theta_{n-2j+1}(\phi_\infty^Z)(\tau) \theta_j(\phi_0^\infty)(\tau; z) y^{-2} \, dy \wedge dx.
\]
We now compute \(\eta^{k/2} \int_{S_{\delta}} (n!)^{-2} \nabla^n \Theta(\phi)(\tau; z) y^{-2} \, dy \wedge dx\) which is equal to
\[
2 \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \int_{S_{\delta}} \eta^{1/2} \theta(\phi_{n-2j+1}) \theta(\phi_{j}^D) \, d\mu_g
= 2m \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \eta^{1/2} \theta(\phi_{n-2j+1}) E(\phi_{j}^D),
\]
where \(m\) is as in (4.23) and for \(\Phi \in \mathcal{S}(D_{0,\delta})\) and \(g \in \operatorname{Mp}(\delta)\),
\[
E(\Phi) = \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma(\delta) \backslash \Gamma(Q)} |e(g)|^{1-(1/2)}(w(\gamma g)\Phi)(0)|_{s=\frac{1}{2}}.
\]
Take \(F = \sum_{m=1}^\infty a_m e(-m \tau^\mp) \in S_k^\infty(\mathbb{H}, \psi^{-1}\chi_{\delta})\) for \(M\) as in (4.26). In the same manner as getting (4.32) from (4.29) and (4.31), for \(\overline{\mathbb{H}} := \mathbb{H}(\mathbb{Q}) \backslash \mathbb{B}(\delta)C_\infty / \mathbb{B}(\mathbb{Z})C_\infty\),
\[
(8.9) \quad 2 \sum_{j=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} (-1)^j \left( \frac{n+1}{2j+1} \right) \int_{\overline{\mathbb{H}}} F(\tau) \eta^{k/2} \theta(\phi_{n-2j+1}^Z)(\tau) \eta^{1/2} \theta(\phi_{j}^D)(0) \, d\mu_\tau
= 2(n+1) \int_{\overline{\mathbb{H}}} F(\tau) \eta^{1/2} \theta(\phi_{n+1}^Z)(\tau) \eta^{k-2} \, d\xi d\eta = 2(k-1) \int_0^\infty \int_0^1 F(\tau) \theta(\phi_{n+1}^Z)(\tau) \, d\xi \eta^{k-3/2} \, d\eta
= 4(\pi)^{(1/2)k-1} \Gamma(k-1) \delta_{\pm}^{k-1} |\Delta_{\pm}|^{-(k+1)/2} \Gamma(k-\frac{1}{2}) \sum_{0 < m \in \mathbb{Z}} \psi(m) a_m m^{-k}.
\]
As before \(\delta_{\pm}^{k-1} |\Delta_{\pm}|^{-k+1/2} = -|\delta_{\pm}|^{-k} \sqrt{-1}\). Thus we get, in the same manner as in Theorem 4.7,

**Theorem 8.3.** Suppose that \(E\) is imaginary and \(D\) is indefinite. Let \(\phi\) be a Schwartz-Bruhat function of \(D_{0,\delta}^\pm\) as in (6.6). Choose \(\phi_{\infty}^\infty\) associated to Dirichlet character \(\psi\) of conductor \(C(\psi)\) and \(\phi_0^\infty\) as in (4.25). Let \(F\) be a primitive Hecke eigenform in \(S_k^\infty(C, \psi^{-1}\chi_{\delta})\) for the conductor \(C\) as in (4.26) and define the \(L_E(n; \mathbb{C})\)-valued harmonic form by
\[
\omega(F) = \int_{\Gamma_\delta \backslash \overline{\mathbb{H}}} \Theta(\phi)(\tau; g) F(\tau) \eta^{k-2} \, d\xi d\eta
\]
for the analytic differential form \(\Theta(\phi)\) as in Proposition 8.1. Then if \(\omega(F) \neq 0\), for the mass \(m\) as in (4.23) and \(E^{\pm}\) as in Theorem 4.7,
\[
\zeta(2) \int_{S_{\delta}} (n!)^{-2} \nabla^n \omega(F) = m E^{\pm}(1) \delta_{\pm}^{k-1} |\Delta_{\pm}|^{-k+4(\pi)^{1/2}-k} \Gamma(k-\frac{1}{2}) L(C(\psi))(1, \text{Ad}(F) \otimes \chi_E)
\]
for \(S_{\delta}\) as in (4.22) with \(\Gamma_\delta := \{ u \in \mathcal{O}_{\delta}(\mathbb{A}^\infty) | \phi_0^\infty \circ u = \phi^\infty \}\). The measure is induced by \(y^{-2} \, dx \, dy\) identifying \(S_{\delta} = D^\times / \mathcal{G}_{\phi^\infty} C_\infty(D_\infty)\) with \(\Gamma_\delta \backslash \mathcal{H}\).
8.3. Computation of Fourier coefficients of theta descent. We now assume that \(D\) is indefinite and \(D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})\). Though the line of the argument is almost identical to the one in Case I D, we give some details as we need to make subtle modifications.

We first interpret the integral for the Schwartz function as in (6.21)

\[
\int_{\Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) \exp (\pm N(v)\tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2} d\mu_z
\]

as an integral of a differential form. In this case \(|\Gamma_\alpha| = \infty\) with finite volume \(\Gamma_\alpha \mathcal{E}\). By (7.12) in which we replace Schwartz function in (6.18) by the one in (6.21) in Case II

\[\theta_\ast(f)(\tau) = \eta^{1/2} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\ast / \Gamma_\alpha} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H}} ([\alpha; x]^{n+1}, f(z; s^*)) \exp (\pm N(v)\tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2} d\mu_z. \tag{8.10}\]

From (8.10) and Lemma 6.14 combined with Proposition 7.2, \(\eta^{-1/2} \theta_\ast(f)(\tau)\) is equal to

\[\sum_{\alpha \in D_\ast / \Gamma_\alpha, D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H}} y(z)[i_{\nu, *}(\alpha; x)^{n+1}, i_{3-\nu, *}(f; s^*)] \exp (\pm N(v)\tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}. \tag{8.11}\]

Choose \(j \in \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{C})\) as in Lemma 6.7 so that \(D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} = j^{-1} M_2(\mathbb{R})j\), where \(\alpha = j^{-1} \beta^\pm j^\mp \) with \(\beta^+ = 1\) if \(\alpha \in D_\ast^+\) and \(\beta^- = \sqrt{-1}\) if \(\alpha \in D_\ast^-\).

Assuming \(D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})\), we need to compute

\[I^{\pm} := \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \backslash \mathcal{H}} y(z)[i_{\nu, *}(\alpha; x)^{n+1}, i_{3-\nu, *}(f; s^*)] \exp (\pm N(v)\tau) \pm \frac{[z; v]^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}}{2y(z)^2}. \tag{8.12}\]

Similarly to (7.17), we have

\[\pm N(\alpha) = \pm N(j^{-1} \beta^\pm j^\mp) > 0. \tag{8.13}\]

By (6.1) in Case II, we have \([1; x] = YX' - XY'\); so,

\[y(z)[i_{\nu, *}(1; x)^{n+1}, i_{3-\nu, *}(f|G^{-1}(g; s^*))] = y(z)[i_{\nu, *}((YX' - XY')^{n+1}), i_{3-\nu, *}(f|G^{-1}(g; s^*)]. \]

Now by the same computation in §7.4 starting from (7.18) ending by (7.24), replacing \(J\) by 1, we reach the equation (7.24) which we repeat:

\[I_{2, *}(n!)^{-2} \nu_n((f; s^*)) = -f_0 y^{-2}(dy \wedge d\tau) + 2f_1 y^{-2}(d\tau \wedge dx) - f_2 y^{-2}(dy \wedge dx) = (n!)^{-2} \nu_n \omega_2(f). \]

For \(P_\alpha(f)\) in (6.44), we get

\[I^{\pm} = c_{\pm, n} \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \backslash H} \exp (2v^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}) d\tau \cdot \int_{\Gamma_\alpha \backslash \text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R})} (f_0^2 + f_2^2) y^{-2} dy \wedge d\tau = c_{\pm, n} \int_{\text{SL}_2(\mathbb{R}) \backslash H} \exp (2v^2 \eta \sqrt{-1}) d\tau \cdot P_\alpha(f). \]

where \(c_{\pm, n} = 2\sqrt{-1} n + 1\) and \(c_{-n} = -2\sqrt{-1} n + 1\). Thus

\[I^{\pm} = 2c_{\pm, n} \eta^{-1/2} \cdot P_\alpha(f). \tag{8.14}\]

Thus we conclude

**Theorem 8.4.** Suppose that \(f : \mathcal{H} \to \text{L}(n^*; \mathbb{C})\) is a cusp form on \(\text{SO}_n(\mathbb{A})\) of weight \(k = n + 2 > 0\) satisfying (M1–3) in §6.1 for \(\Gamma = \Gamma_\phi\) with an arbitrary \(\phi^{(\infty)}\). Then we have

\[\theta_\ast(f) = 2c_{\pm, n} \sum_{\alpha \in D_\ast / \Gamma_\alpha, D_{\alpha, \mathbb{R}} \cong M_2(\mathbb{R})} \phi^{(\infty)}(\alpha) P_\alpha(f) \exp (\pm N(v)\tau), \]

where \(c_{\pm, n} = 2\sqrt{-1} n + 1\) and \(c_{-n} = -2\sqrt{-1} n + 1\) and \(P_\alpha(f)\) as in (6.44).

Department of Mathematics, UCLA, Los Angeles, CA 90095-1555, U.S.A.
E-mail address: hida@math.ucla.edu